FRENC
TVTOR

BY WAY OF

GRAMMA

EXACTLY A

fully teaching all the m
necessary Rules, for the at-
taining of the French
tongue.

WHEREVNTO
are also annexed three Dia
the furtherance and practice of
Schollers, and others desir
said Language.

By R.S.

LONDON
Printed f

PC 2109
.S58
Rare Reserve

To the Reader.

His Grammar I have compiled and gathered, partly out of my long experience of Teaching, and partly by following in many things Mon-

ſieur Maupas *of Blois, a man well knowne to ſome of the greateſt of this kingdome, (who have travelled) to be the learnedeſt and moſt expert Teacher of his tongue. I have proceeded herein by a Grammaticall order, and having given plaine and perfect rules for pronunciation; I ſhew the nature and uſe of the Articles, a thing of no ſmall importance*

in this Language; also the way to find out the Genders of all Nounes: the Conjugating of all Verbes regular and irregular; and after which followeth a list of most of the undeclinable parts (which commonly doe much hinder learners) alphabetically englished; with a most ample Syntax of all the parts of speach: and in the end I have framed a copious Index, expounding all such Nounes and Verbes as lye scattered any where unenglished: Lastly, thou hast here three Dialogues for thy further practice. In all which, my aime and endeavour hath beene to profite the lovers of the Language, and my onely desire is thy courteous approbation: which if I shall obtaine, I shall bee encouraged to further labours in this kinde.

Thine R. S.

The moſt materiall Faults eſcaped.

PAge 15. l. 16. read, *chevaux*. p. 18. l. 8. r. *her*. p. 33. l. 12. the firſt *mauvaiſe*, r. *mauvais*. p. 35. l. 12. r. *bourreau*. p. 36. l. 8. r. *Orfevre*. p. 37. l. 9. r. *limon*. p. 39. l. 27. r. or *pſeaume*. p. 51. l. 25. r. *que* p. 65. l. 12. *deroy*, r. *devroy*. p. 67. l. 10. r. *fourniſſant*, *fourniſſons*. p. 70. l. 22. r. *tueus* p. 71. l. 3. r. *ils ont eu*. & l. 18. r. *Baſt i*. in the ſame p. the third perſ. put twice. p. 73. l. 24 r. *aurrois*. p. 82. l. 15. r. *Nous*. p. 86. l. 6. r. *j'ay eſquarré*: & l. 18. r. *Defaillir*. p. 87. l. 4. r. *Repartir*: & l. 21. r. *ils timdrent*. p. 88. l. 20. r. *Chaloir*. p. 89. l. 25. r. *ils*. p. 93. l. 3. r. *Eſmoudre*. p. 94. l. 2. r. *ſemondre*, and l. 20. r. *vaincs*, or *vainqs*. and l. 21. r. *vaincu*. p. 95. l. ult. r. *are*. p. 96. l. 3. r. *chaut*: & l. 19. r. *prudemment*. & l. 26. r. *ſoudain*. p. 98. l. 25. r *peu*. p. 99. l. 23. r. *meſnage*: & colum. 2. l. 4. r. *au*. p. 136. l. 27. r. *que*. p. 139. l. 16. r. *ſoyent*. p. 141. l. 22. r. *well*, *I will*. p. 142. l. 23. there is (*well*) too much. p. 144. l. 1. r. *ſometimes put*. p. 147. l. 9. for *who*, r. *hee*. p 149. l. 15. r. *pauvre*. p. 159 l. 21. r. *Ie m'efforce*. p. 162. l. 19. r. *conſtamment*. p. 166. l. 18. for *Tuant*, read *Quant*. p. 176. l. 20. after *baſtonnade*, r. *a baſtonading*. p. 180. l. 9. r. *cognoiſtre*. p. 181. l. laſt, r. *couvercle*. p. 185. col. 1. l. 10. r. *it annoyeth*, *grieveth*. p. 187. col. 2. l. 1. r. *Eſpreindre*. p. 189. col. 1. l. 17. r *fawne*. p. 192. col. 1. l. 22. r. *fiſh-hooke*. p. 194. col. 1. l. laſt, r. *Larroneau*. p. 198. col. 2. l. 3. r. *Noircir*. p. 205. col. 2. l. 28. r *ſe rompre*. p. 206. col. 1. l. 22. r. *Ruſtique*. p 210. col. 1. l. 17. for *ſiſt*, r. *fiſt* p. 217. l. 21. r. *ça*. p. 230. 16. for *baiſa*, r. *baiſe*. page 231. l. 23, read, *ſhe hath done*.

Finis
Chamberlaine

The most materiall Faults escaped.

Aux Illustres & Tresnobles Gentils-hommes François, Seigneurs & Allemans, Danois, & Flamens, desireux d'apprendre la langue Angloise.

AYant (Messeigneurs) eu l'honneur de monstrer à plusieurs grands Seigneurs vos compatriots la langue Angloise en ceste ville de Londres, & ayant receu de leur faveur beaucoup plus d'honneur que n'ont porté mes merites, I'ay bien voulu, pour ne me monstrer du tout ingrat, dedier ce mien labeur, tel qu'il est, à vos genereuses Seigneuries: esperant

esperant un jour de publier sous vo-
re adveu une Grammaire angloise
toute entiere : vous suppliant cepen-
dant de prendre en gré ceste petite re-
cognoissance, de Celuy qui est, &
plusiours sera

De vos Seigneuries

tres humble Serviteur

R. S. *de Londres.*

Place this French Epistle betweene foli
212. & 213. next before the first Dialogue.

nd the further to exemplifie these two last notes, marke this verse:

Puis que l'ame humaine est d'une essence immortelle,

seeing that the Soule of man is of an immortall essence, read it thus;

Puis ke l'amuntean e d'un essans immortelle.

Let this *e* in some phrases, at the end of Verbes of the first person, the pronounce *je* following, is sounded almost as *e* masculine, for the more Emphasis, as *Cherche-je vostre dommage?* Do I seeke your hurt? The third sort of *e* is called the open *e*, because it is pronounced with a more open mouth than the two former, as the English doe their Diphthong *ea* in *Sea, feare*, and the like. It is in all monasyllables in *r* and *s*, as *fer, mer, les, mes, des, tes, ses, ces, pres*, and in these dissyllables in *er* and *er*, *Expres, apres, acces, exces, proces, deces, succes, fier, danger, mestier, cordonnier*, and other names of Occupations, *messager, vacher, archer*, &c. Also afore *c, l, t*, and *x*, as *avec, tel, discret, perplex*; also in all words, whose first syllable is *ES*, or *E*, as *Escrire, Estudier, Eviter, Eglise*. Note that in the words *Netteté, Eslevé*, and som others, all the three sorts or sounds of *e* are found; the first being the open *e*, the second the feminine, and the third the masculine.

Further, observe these three rules: First, a word ending in *é* masculine, if there be *e* in the syllable afore it, the same is short, as *levé*: Se-

 condly,

condly, a word ending in *e* feminine, if there
e in the syllable afore it, the same is the open *e*,
leve. Thirdly, when this vowell is doubled
the midst of words, they are both masculine;
the first masculine, and the second the open *e*,
Séel, réel, agreer, queer, &c. but if it be doubled
the end of words, then the first is the masculin
and the latter the feminine, as *Aimée*, beloved.

Also *e* afore *m* and *n*, is sounded as *a*, as E
tendement, which pronounce *antandamant*; exce
in the third persons plurall of verbs ending
ent, as *Aiment*, which sound *aimet*, the *e* beein
short; except also when *i* commeth afore it
the same syllable, as *Adien, tien, sien, bien, rien, chien*
but when the syllable is parted, it is sounded as
as in these; *Audience, science, experience, escient,*
gredient, inconvenient, expedient, orient, sient, clien
patient, and their derivatives.

I vowell is pronounced as the English do
their diphthong *ee* in *deem, meet, needy*, and th
like, as *le mine*, which sound *feet meene*. And no
that *i* is set afore *l* in the midst, and *l* at the en
of words, without being pronounced, as *faillir*
it serving onely for a signe of the liquification
the *l*, as in that letter shall be shewed.

O is pronounced as in Latin or English, savin
afore *m, n*, and *s*, making together a syllable
where it is founded as the English doe their *oo*
Moon, groom, brood; as *Mon bon homme*, whic
reac

ade *moon boon oome*: but it hath its owne ſound here the ſyllable is divided, as in words compound with the Preposition *Pro*, as *Promettre*, *ovenir*, and in words formed of the Greeke and tine, as *Comete, tome, homicide, domicile, dominer, mir, honorable; novice, ovale; povre* (which is al- written *pauvre*). Alſo *o* afore *l* in ſome words, hich is ſounded *oo*; as in *l* ſhall be ſhewed.

u vowell hath a ſound peculiar to the French, er a kinde of whiſtling, by opening a little the d of the lips, and as it were between *ou* and *i* rench) except in the diphthong *ou*. Examples the ſounds coming neer to it, you may have the Scottiſh word *gud*, or the Engliſh words *e, lute*.

i is never uſed for a conſonant (as in Engliſh), d is ſounded as the French *i*, or Engliſh *ee*; yet ever ſet to liquifie the *l*, as the *i* is. It is uſed her alone, as *y eſt il?* is hee there? or where ght be miſtaken for a conſonant, as *yver, yeux*; between two vowels, as *payement, playe, ioye*; in the end of words, as *foy, appuy*; or laſtly, keep the orthographie, as *Syllable, Myſtere*, &c.

The pronunciation of Conſonants.

THE generall rule of conſonants, is, that when two or three conſonants come toge- none but the later is pronounced, as *Eſtes- là?* are you there? which reade *Este voo là?* pt the firſt be any of the liquids *l, m, n, r*, or *c*.

or *f* ſometime: as *Mon livre*, my book, *avec m* with me; where the *n* & *c* are ſounded. or oth wiſe the rule may be this: *B*, *d*, *g*, *p*, *ſ*, *t*, *x*, and *z* not pronounced (at the end of words eſpeciall when they come after another Conſonant (pecially beginning the next word) as *Tantoſt f* ſoon done; which ſound, *Tanto fet*: yet anie co ſonant finiſhing a period, is ever pronounc And for better underſtanding of this whole r take this larger example: *Il eſt trop tard de fer l'eſtable quand les chevaux ſont dehors*: It is too to ſhut the ſtable when the horſes be gone. wh muſt thus be pronounced, *Il e tro tar de ferme table kan le ſhevo ſoon dehors*.

B in the midſt of words, comming afore other conſonant (viz. *m*, *n*, *ſ*, *t*, *v*) may be prono ced, yet moderately; as, *Abſence*, *abſynthe*, *obme ſubmettre*, *abnegation*, *ſubſtance*, *nonobſtant*, *obte ſubvenir*, *ſubvertir*. But in the preposition *Su* and in theſe words, *ſubject*, *debvoir*, *debteur*, *deb* is not pronounced, and it is in your choyc write it or not. Alſo at the end of words *Plomb*, *palomb*, *coulomb*, the *b* is not ſounded.

C, afore *e*, *i*, and *y*, is ſounded as *ſ*: as *Cecy*. afore other vowels, as *k*: as *Car*, *corps*; *ç* with or tail under, is ſounded as *ſ*, or *ſſ*, as *deça*, *façon* ſo *Ch* is pronounced as *ſh*, as *choſe*, *chemin*. ex in the Greeke words *Archange*, *characterè*; *ch on*, *chreſme*; and in *Cholera*, *chorde*, *aſchole*, *Chi*

nd in proper names, as *Nicholas*: in all which ound it as *k*, omitting *h*. At the end of words is pronounced; as *Avec, sac, tric trac*, and com- nonly also in the midst of a word; as *Accident, ccepter, acte, action, fiction, delict, dicter, succes, effectu-, affection, infecter, facteur, detracteur*, &c. except it llow a diphthong, as *Luict, alaicter, fruict, nuict, ennuicter, luicter, traict*, & its derivatives, *traicter, traict*, &c *faict, poinct, joincture*; except also *succes, fect, ject, lict, dict*, & their derivatives, *jecter, subject, roject, alicter, edict*: in all wch *C* is not pronoun- d, saving in *Effectuer* abovesaid, and *Conjecture*.

D finishing a syllable, and comming afore *m*, r *i*, or *v*, consonants, is commonly not sounded, s *Admiral, adjuger, advancer*; except in these, *dmettre, admirer, administrer, adverbe, adversaire, djection, adversité*, and their derivatives. Also *D* the end of a word, the next beginning with a owell or *h* mute, is sounded as *t*, as *Appren dil? rand honneur*, which reade *apprantil, grantoonneur*: nd so after an *n* at the end of words, it serves to ngthen that syllable.

F at the end of words is ever plainly pronoun- d, as *œuf, soif, vif*: but in feminine Adjectives, hose Substantives end in *f*, it is not pronoun- d, as *briefve* of *brief, griefve* of *grief, souëfve* of *uëf*, &c.

G afore *e, i*, and *y*, hath a kinde of soft sound *j* consonant, as *gisant, juge*: but afore any o-

ther vowell hard, as *Garder, gouverner.* Sob
times between *g*, and one of these vowels; *a*,
put an *e*, which is not pronounced, but serve
onely to mollifie the *g*, as *bourgeois, songeard, g*
dier, &c. and contrariwise, *u* is oftentimes set
tween *g* and *e*, or *i*, to harden its pronunciati
(the *u* not being sounded) as *Guerir, guerre, guis*
which sound as the English doe *gueſt, Gilber*
yet in these words, *Eſguiſer*, and the proper na
Guiſe, the *u* is pronounced. When *g* comme
afore *n*, it hath a faint and liquid sound, not p
ting the *g* and *n*, but making them together to
the beginning of the syllable following, as *O*
non, mignon, vigne, allemagne, compagnie, ſoigner, co
pagnon, which sound *mi-gnon, compa-gnon*; or
most as the English *minion, companion*; *nion* i
king but one, not two syllables: except *Cogn*
ſtre, and its compounds and derivatives, in w
g seemeth to be turned into *u*, so as it is sound
as if it were written *Counoiſtre*: some therefo
write it *Connoiſtre*. Also *ſigne* and its derivati
are indifferently pronounced, *ſine* or *ſigne, ſig*
fier or *ſinifier*, though *g* be ever written. Also
these words, *doigt* and *vingt*, *g* is idle, saving or
ly to shew their Originall. At the end of wor
not diphthonged, as *ſang, rang, long*, *g* serves
make the syllable long: but in words diphtho
ged, it is not sounded, as *ſoing, loing, poing, beſoi*
and in *hurang*, wch are often written *ſoin, loin,*

H is mute, or loseth its aspiring sound in many words, especially come from the Latine, as *ure, honneste, homme, heur, heureux, heritier, helas, leine, trahir, ebahir*; also in *huict, huictiesme, huictaine*, and *huile*, with their derivatives, where *h* meth to have a peculiar sound, almost as *v*, as it were written *vuict*, or after the English Orographie *meet*: but in many other words, wch e meer French, it is sounded with a strong aspiation, as *Haït, hannir, áhan, áhaumer, hardi, hard, honnir, harangue, hanter*. When *c* comes afre *h*, it is sounded, as in *c* is shewed.

I is a consonant, when beginning a syllable it meth afore a vowell, as *Ialoux, jeune, joli*, and is onounced as *g* before *e* or *i*, but nothing so rd as the English: which is good to bee learned by the eare.

L hath its naturall sound, saving in *sol* (for a ece of money called a *souz*) pronounced *sou*: for *col, licol, mol, fol*, which after the vulgar sort e pronounced *cou, mou*, &c. they are better pronounced as they are written; but *cul* soundeth ot the *l*. Also *l* is not pronounced after the phthongs *au, eu, ou*, nor afore *t, s*, or *z* in the me syllable, as *Heaulme, paulme, hault, faulx, veult, ult, couldre, mouldre, poulser, poulpitre, saoul, fils, ils, ls*: yet in *coulpe, poulpe*, and their derivatives, e *l* is sounded. Moreover, double *ll* after *ai, ei, ui, oui*, and *yi*, in the midst of words; and sin-

gle

gle *l* at the end of words, hath a liquid ſound, ſlightly touching with the tongue the roofe the mouth (almoſt as in the Engliſh word *ſcull*) the *i* not being ſounded (or as if it were turn into *g*) but ſerving onely as a note of the ſaid quid ſound, as *Travailler*, *veiller*, *faillir*, *cueil* *mouiller*, *brouiller*, *Iuillet*, &c. *vieil*, *ſoleil*, *eſmail*, *eſventail*, *babil*, *portail*, *peril*, *baril*, *accueuil*, *cercu* *ſommeil*, *reſveil*, *verrouril*, &c. except heere *vi* *mille*, *caviller*, *pupille*, *eſtoile*, which are found with one *l*; except alſo *il*, *fil*, *vil*, *util*, *ſubtil*, *vi* *ſervil*, *cil* (in poeſie) for *celuy*, *poil* and *mil* for nu ber, which ſound *l* plainly. The Italians in th *voglio*, and the like, and the Spaniards in th *llamar* come ſomewhat neer this liquifaction o And for your exerciſe, marke the difference ſound in theſe words, *Piller*, *piler*, *bailler*, *baler*, *lier*, *faillir*, *falir*, *ſueil*, *ſeul*, *vieille*, *vielle*, &c.

M at the end of words is weakly ſounded *n*, without cloſing the lips, as *faim*, *renom*.

N is not ſounded at all in the third perſo plurall of verbs ending in *ent*, as *aiment*, *donne* which ſound *imet*, *donet*.

P, in ſome words come from the Latine, a at end of words, is pronounced, as *Preſompti* *option*, *precepte*, *hanap*, *coup*, *galop*, *ſeptante*, *ſeptentri* *adoption*, *ſoupçon*: but in many other words, tweene two conſonants, and ſometimes af one, is not ſounded, as *Compter*, *corps*, *tem*

cham

champs, nepveu, niepce, ſept, je romps, dempter, baptiſer, and their derivatives; alſo in theſe plurals, draps, canaps, ſirops, camps, coups, nopces, and the like.

R ſingle is gently ſounded, as *guere*; but doubled, ſtrongly, with prolonging the ſyllable, as *guerre, terre.*

S betweene two vowels is ſounded as *z*, as *Cauſe, choſe, maiſon*; alſo in theſe words, *priſe, miſe*, and their derivatives, and makes the ſyllable afore it long, ſo it be not an *e* feminine, which is ever ſhort, as in theſe words, *peſer, geſir, meſure*, and the like: except from this rule thoſe compounds whoſe ſimples begin with *ſ*, as *Exſaluer, reſerrer, reſembler*, which ſound it ſtrongly. This letter is written in many words where it is not ſounded, and is there but to lengthen the ſyllable, as *Eſcrire*, which may be written (as by ſome it is) *écrire*. But to knowe where this letter *ſ* is to be pronounced, and where not, obſerve theſe rules: Firſt, *ſ* is ſounded in all compounds with theſe inſeparable prepoſitions; *As, abs, cons, diſ, inſ, poſt, proſ, obſ, ſubſ, ſuſ, tranſ, reſ*; as *Aſtraindre, abſtenir, diſputer, conſtant, ſubſtance, ſuſpect, tranſcrire*, &c. excepting hence *Reſpondre, reſpandre, reſſuer, reſuerie, reſueil, reſueiller, reſpit, reſtablir*, which ſound it not. Secondly, words beginning with *Eſ*, commonly ſound not *ſ*, as *Eſcrire, eſclorre, eſbouſſeter, eſtudier*, &c. except *Eſperer, eſpoir, eſperance, eſtagne, eſpace, eſpece, eſtaſe, eſtame, eſtamine*, ſa-

mell-

mell-cloth, but not for Tamie-ſtuffe; *eſtropier, eſtropiat, eſtrapade, eſtradiot, eſtrade, eſtimer, eſprit, eſpion, eſtoc, eſtoccade, eſtafier*, all which pronounce the *ſ*. Thirdly, *ſ* is pronounced when it cometh afore *c* ſounded hard, *qu*, or *g*, as *Eſclandre, riſque, eſcabeau, eſcamper, eſcarbillat, eſcarbot, eſcargot, eſcarlatin* (but not *eſcarlate*) *eſcarpins, eſcarcelle, eſcalade, eſcarre, eſcopetterie, eſcorne* for ſcorn or ſhame, *Eſcouäde, eſquadron, eſquiver, birraſque, baſque, biſcaye, biſcuit, boſquet, bruſque, buſquer, caſque, contreſcarpe, croteſque, damaſquiner, debuſquer, ambuſcade, friſque, juſques, juſquiame, lanſquenet, maſque, moſquèt, moſquee, muſc, muſcles, obeliſque, paſquil, preſque*: except *paſque, eſueſque, eſclat, eſcart, eſcouter, eſclair, eſclairer, eſquierre, eſquarrer*, and ſome others which follow the ſecond rule above given in not pronouncing *ſ*. Fourthly, the *ſ* is ſounded in ſuch as come from Latine words in *ſto, ſtis, ſtus, ſtris*, as *Perſiſter, peſte, modeſte, conteſter, triſte, illuſtre*, &c. except *Preſter* & its compounds: yet *preſtation* ſoundeth *ſ*. Fiftly, it is pronounced in all proper names, as *Auguſte*; except in theſe, *Baſle, Creſpin, Eſcoſſe, Hieroſme*, which omit it. Sixtly, it is ſounded in words ſignifying the faſhion of peoples, *à la Moreſque*, after the Mooriſh faſhion, *Gregueſque*, &c. And moreover, *ſ* is pronounced in theſe words following, and ſome others come from the Latine; *Accoſter*, ſignifying to approach, but not when it is to prop up, *Anna-*

naliſte

aliste. Apostor. Apostolique, but not in *Apostre. A-*
ostume. Artiste. Asperges, and *Asperger. Astres.*
Attester. Baster, to suffice, but not *Baster*, to put
n a pack-saddle. *Bastille. Bastion. Bastonnade*, but
ot in *Baston. Bestialité*, and *Bestiole*, but not in
estail, Beste, nor *Bestelette. Blasphemer. Came-*
ste. Caustique. Celeste. Chasteté. Circonstance. Ci-
ernes. Clistere. Desastre. Desesperer. Enregistrer.
vangeliste. Festin, but not in *Feste. Gastadour.*
aspiller. Gestes. Herboriste. Histoire. Improviste.
ceste. Instant. Inspirer. Investiture, not in *Vestir.*
riste. Iustice. Legiste. Liste. Limestre. Leste. Lu-
e. Mastic. Menstrual. Ministre. Miste. Mole-
. Monstre, a Monster, but not for a Muster.
Moustache. Moustele. Nonobstant. Ostade. Pen-
niste. Pastel. Pastorelle, not in *Pastoureau* and
istre. Pastenades. Poste. Pisteau. Postillon. Postille.
uastion. Reste. Rustre. Rustaud. Sequestre. Si-
tre, not *Senestre. Tempestif*, not in *Tempeste.*
ster. Testament. Teston. Testonner. Vestiaire. Vi-
mpenard.

T afore *i*, in words come from the Latine, is
unded as *ç* or *s*, as *Ambition, seditieux*: except
Amitié, inimitié, pitié, moitié. Further, *th* is pro-
unced onely *t*, as *Atheiste*. Also in words en-
g in *ts* it is not sounded, as *un rets, des mots*.
l in this little word *Et* it is never pronoun-
l. Lastly, in the third person singular of verbs
ing with a vowell, when *il, elle*, or *on* do fol-
low,

low, though no *s* bee seen, yet must one bee (
tween the verb and them) pronounced: *Fera*
Dira-on? as if it were written *Feratil? Dirat*
which is sometime discerned by this conju
tive note —.

V is a consonant when it comes afore a vo
ell, or afore an *r* in the same syllable, as *ver*
vray, couvrir: in which last word, the first *u* i
vowell, the other a consonant.

X, in words come of the Latine, keepeth
sound, as *Perplex, expedier, example*, and in th
meere French words, *Exploit, exploiter*. Otherw
at end of words it is pronounced as *s*, or in t
midst between two vowels, as *z*; as *Dix, ma*
heureux, sixiesme, deuxiesme: except in *Soixan*
lexive, in wch it is sounded as *ss*, thus, *soissante*, &

Pronunciation of Diphthongs and Triphthongs.

TWo or three vowels together, making b
one sound or syllable, are called dipthon
or tripthongs.

Ai, or *Ay* is commonly pronounced as the
pen *e*, or *é* masculine: as *I'ay, mais, paix, faire*: wh
reade *jé, més, pés, fére*. From this rule are these
ceptions: 1. When it commeth afore a vowel
Aye, ayons, ayant; where it hath its naturall sou
as if you said, *A-i-ons*, or *a-y-ant*; yet making th
but two syllables. 2. Also when it commet
fore *m* or *n* (without an *e* following) as *M*

aim: which is sounded somewhat broadly, almost as the English do *y* or *i*, in *lyme*, *mine*, and the like. but note, that when an *e* followeth the said *n*, it is sounded *é*, as *laine*, *haine*. 3 Except when it commeth afore *ll* in the midst, or single *l* at the end of words: as *Bailler*, *travail*. as also afore *gn*: as *Compaignie*, *allemaigne* (as some doe write them) where onely *a* is sounded, the *i* serving but for a signe of liquifying the *l* or *gn*, as in those letters is shewed.

Ao is sounded either by omitting the *a*, as in *aoul*, which reade *sou*; or by omitting the *o*, as in *aon*, *faon*, *taon*; which sound *Pân*, *fân*, *tân*, long: yet in *Paonner*, *faonner*, both letters are pronounced.

Au is ever sounded *o*, as *Pauvre*, *haut*, *chevaus*; which reade *Po-vre*, *hôt*, *chevôs*: but if a vowell or *v* follow the *v*, then is it a consonant: as *avoir*, *avre*.

Ea soundeth both letters in *Peage*, *peageur*; but not in the word *Dea*, for which say *du*.

Eau sound *eo*; as *Peau*, *beauté*: it is separated into two syllables in the word *Héaume*.

Ei afore the syllables *ne*, *se*, *ze*, is sounded as *é* masculine: as *Peine*, *treize*: except afore *n* without *e* after it: as *plein*, which soundeth both. Also in these *vei*, *fei*, and their derivatives, is pronounced as if they were written *vi*, *si*, or as the English *ee*.

Eoi is but *oi*; as *veoir*, or *voir*, of which anon.

Eu soundeth both, as *heur*, or as the English *u* in the preterperfect tenses of verbes; as *veu*, *p*. It is not a dipthong, when *a* followeth *u*, but th *u* becommeth a consonant; as *evader*: the li when it comes afore *r* in manie words: as *D vray*, *recevray*, *fiévre*, *lévre*, *liévre*, *kiévre*; but *Meilleur*, *seur*, &c. it is a dipthong.

Eui, *iei*, *uei*, *oui*, *œi*, are sounded *eu*, *ie*, *ou*, *œ*, with out pronouncing the last *i*, which comming fore *ll* or *l*, serveth but to make the *l* liquid; *recueuil*, or *recueil*, *vieil*, *mouiller*, *oeil*.

Ie expresseth both vowels jointly: as *pied*, *so lier*: yet *ie* is sometimes separated into two sy lables; first, in words ending in *e* feminine: *amie*: secondly, in the Infinitive mood of verb in *ier*: as *prier*: thirdly, in names of Nation an of Art, ending in *ien*: as *Italien*, *Musitien*.

Ieu soundeth all mixt into one; as *Yeux*, *mieu lieu*: but it is divided into two syllables, in Adj ctives in *eux*, come from Latins in *osus*: as *Grac eux*, *curieux*; and in words come of verbs, who Infinitives end in *ier*: as *Prieur*, *crieur*.

Io is onely a dipthong in the first person pl rall of verbes: as *Aimions*.

Oi and *Oy* is sounded *oe* or *œ*: as *foy*, *trois*. B afore *n*, as *oindre*, it hath it owne sound.

Oeu sound *eu*; as *œuf*, *cœur*, *sœur*.

Ou is sounded as the English *oo* in *brood*, *moon*

and the like: as *Pour vous nous mourons tous*: for your sake we die all.

Oie or *Oye*, is no triphthong, save onely in the third persons plurall of verbs: as *Aimoyent*. which sound as *oy*, but long.

ui or *uy*, lively soundeth both the vowels in one syllable: as *luy*, *nuict*.

Of Orthography, of quantitie of Syllables, and of Accents.

THough we have alreadie, in the pronunciation, given sufficient light for learning the Orthographie; yet these few notes (given by some) are not to be contemned.

1 The most part of strange words come from the Latine and Greeke, doe retaine (howsoever pronounced) their owne Orthographie; as *Philosophe*, *Chirurgien*, *lict*, *faict*: and not as the Italians *filosofo*, *letto*, *fatto*.

2 Syllables are not distinguished by the number of letters: for though most of them consist of two or three letters; yet some be of 4 or 5, or more, as *Dieux*, *cieulx*.

3 Nounes come from Latine words in *osus*, in French doe end in *eux*; as *odieux*, of *odiosus*.

4 There be many words differ little or nothing in pronunciation, but much in writing and signification. as these: *Sain*, sound, and *Sein* bosome. *Laid*, foule, and *Laict*, milke. *Grace*,

grace, and *Grasse* fatt. *Pescher*, to fish, and *Pecher* to sinne. *Sans*, without, and *Sens*, the sense. *Vaine* vaine, and *Veine*, a veine. *Faix*, a burden, & *Fais* doest. *Saur*, a sister, and *Seur*, sure. *Saint*, holy and *Ceinct*, girt. *D'eux*, of them; and *Deux*, two *Maistre*, Maister; and *Mettre*, to put. *Quand* when; and *Quant á*, as for. *Selle*, a saddle; and *Celle*, hee, or that. *Nom*, a name; and *Non*, not, or no. *Se*, himselfe, or it selfe; and *Ce*, this. *Pois* pease, *Poids*, weight; and *Poix*, pitch. *Compte*, a reckoning, *Comte*, an Earle; and *Conte*, a tale *Point*, not, *Poinct*, a point; and *Poing*, a fist. *Mais* but, *Mets*, a dish of meate; and *Mes*, my. *Ville*, a citie or towne; and *Vile*, base.

For the quantitie of syllables, observe first that the last syllable, or last save one, is with the French, for the most part, accented or made long in pronunciation; as *Magie*, *apres*.

2 Everie vowell afore *m* or *n*, joined with an other consonant, is long: as *Santé*, *endormir*.

3 The syllable comming next afore *e* feminine, is ever long: as *Dragee*, *magie*, *tue*, *voye*, *caille*, *symbole*, *louäble*, &c.

4 The syllable next afore *é* masculine, whether the same *é* be accented, or before *r* or *z*, unaccented, is for the most part short: as *Tuër*, *tuez*.

5 The diphthong *au* is long: as *autrement*.

6 All verbes ending in *a*, *as*, and *ast*, have the

syl

llable long: as *Aima, aimas, aimast.*

7 Words ending in *os*, have the ſame long: *Propas, diſpos, repos.*

8 Whenſoever a letter is not ſounded, the ſyllable afore it is long: as *Teſte, Maſtin*; which putth a difference betweene them and *Tete, matin.*

The acute accent is never uſed, but over *é* maſculine: the grave accent is uſed over *Là* the Adverbe of place, to diſtinguiſh it from *La* the feminine article or pronoune; and over *Où* the Adverbe of place, to diſtinguiſh it from *Ou* the diſiunctive; and over *à* the article or prepoſition, to diſtinguiſh it from the verbe *à*, hath.

Apoſtrophus is a note or ſigne of a letter wanting, and ſupplied by this mark (') and is uſed eſpecially in Monaſyllables in *e*, ſuch as *Ie, me, te, de, ne, que, le, ce*, and *la*; as *I' aime* for *Ie aime*, *ame* for *la ame*; and in the conjunction *ſi* afore as *ſ' il, ſ' ils*; and in verſe ſometimes *ſ' elle, elles, ſ' on, ſ' ainſi*, for *ſi elle, ſi elles, ſi on, ſi ainſi*; ſo in the Prepoſitions *entre* and *contre* in compoſition, as *Contr' oppoſer, entr' ouïr, entr' ouvrir*: ſo in *ma, ta, ſa*, & *mon, ton, ſon*, as *m' amie m' amour, amie t' amour, ſ' amie ſ' amour*, for *mon amie mon nour, ton amie ton amour, ſon amie ſon amour*: alſo hen a ſyllable is eut off by Syncope, as *ſça' vous* r *ſçavez vous?* and the like.

Two points ·· over a vowell are ſometimes , either to ſhew the ſame vowell not to bee

(mistaken for) a consonant, as *Moüelle*; or th
the same is to be divided from a vowell aforeg
ing, as *queuë*, *naïf*, *reïterer*, *reünir*, *jouër*; whi
reade *keu-e*, &c.

The conjunctive note is a short division-li
between two words sounded together as on
as *Porte-faix. di-je. que fait-il?*

As for the points and distinction of period
marks of interrogation, parenthesis, admiratio
&c. the use of the Latine is to be followed.

Chap. II.

Of the Articles.

An Article (after some Authors) is a decl
nable part of speech, whereby other part
to wit, Nounes, Pronounes, and Participles (o
therwise of themselves undeclinable) are decl
ned, and their Genders, Numbers, and Cas
knowne: although in truth these onely, *le*, *la*, *les*
doe seem to be Articles, and the other Prepositi
ons rather.

The ordinary declining or distribution o
them is thus:

The definite Articles.

		Masc. Gender,	feminine.
Sing.	Nom. Accusat.	*Le,*	*la.*
	Gen. Ablat.	*Du, de l',*	*de la.*
	Dative	*Au, à l',*	*à la.*

Com

Common Gender.

ur. { *Les*, the. / *Des*, of the, from the, with the. / *aux*, *és*, to the, at the, in the.

Note, that *de l'* and *à l'* are both of the Masculine and Feminine Genders, and are set before nouns beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, to avoid gaping, as *de l' enere*, *à l' homme*.

The Indefinite Articles, being of the Common Gender, and of both Numbers.

Nomin. Accus. without an Article; but in English the Article *a* or *an*.

Genit. Ablat. *De*, of, from, with; or of a, from with a, or an.

Dative, *à*, to, at, for, or to a, at a, for a, or an.

Hence you see, that the French have but three distinct cases, the Nominative and Accusative both one, and the Genitive and Ablative.

The definite Articles (called by some finite) do denote a certain definite or limited thing; have the force to collect, restrain, or bound universall or generall signification of words (which they have of themselves) to a strict sense, and to one alone, as the English also doe by the Article *The*; as *I' ay veu le Roy*, *je suis servi-teur du Roy*, *j' ay parlé au Roy*; I have seene the King, I am servant of the King, I have spoken to the King; meaning one certain King onely, as the King of England, or some one King (haply)

before, or immediately after ſpoken of.

On the contrary, the indefinite Articles bi
not to any particular ſubject, but leave th
termes to their unbounded generality; as, C
eſt vray Roy qui regne par juſtice, he is a true K
which raigneth by juſtice. *Il promit en foy de*
de garder equité, hee promiſed in the faith
King to maintaine equity. *Il affiert á Roy de r*
ſes ſujets comme pere, it belongs to a King to
his ſubjects as a father.

So, when wee ſpeak of a whole integrall
dy, wee ſpeak indefinitely, uſing the Articl
or the Pronoune *quelque*; as firſt, of Subſtan
as *un Roy*, a King, *quelque Roy* ſome King, *une*
a ſword, &c. Secondly, of qualites adherin
Subſtances, as *une peine* a paine, *un ſouci* a
une chaleur a heat, *quelque ſoin* ſome care,
Now in this ſenſe ſpeaking of theſe in the p
number, we apply *des* before the Subſtantive
De before Adjectives preceding thoſe Sub
tives, as *Des Rois* Kings, *de bons Rois* good K
des ſoucis cares, *de poignans ſoucis* pricking ca

The uſe of definite Articles.

1. Contrariwiſe, when wee ſpeak of th
(as it were) by parts, portions, or a quanti
them, we uſe the definite Articles; and th
firſt, when wee ſpeak of ſubſtances, retainin
name of the whole, as *Du pain* bread, or
bread; *du vin* wine, or ſome wine; *de la toi*

nen cloth, or ſome linnen cloth. Secondly, when we ſpeak of qualities adhering to thoſe ſubſtances, or lying in the action of the underſtanding, as *De la chaleur* heat, or ſome heat; *de la blancheur* whiteneſſe, or ſome whiteneſſe; *du froid* cold, or ſome cold; *de la peine* paine, ſome paine; *du plaiſir* pleaſure, or ſome pleaſure; *de l' eſprit* wit, ſome wit. And in theſe phraſes and ſenſe, theſe Articles have not onely place in the Genitive or Ablative Caſes, but alſo in the Nom. Accuſ. and Dative, by means of the Article *à*: as *C' eſt de l' argent* it is money, or ſome money; *verſez du vin* fill ſome wine; *ceſte liqueur reſemble à du vin* this liquour is like to wine, *j' ay employé mes deniers à du blé* I have imployed my money in corne, *à de la marchandiſe* in marchandiſe, *j' ay veu des Gentils-hommes* I have ſeen ſome gentlemen, *j' ay communiqué mon affaire à des Docteurs* I have communicated my buſineſſe to ſome Doctors, or to Doctors.

But when in theſe phraſes the Adjectives are ſet and conſtrued before the Subſtantives, then in ſtead of *du, de l', de la* and *des*, it is better to uſe *de*, as *de bon vin* good wine, *de fine ſoye* fine ſilke, *de belle eſtoffe* faire ſtuffe, *de braves Gentils-hommes* brave Gentlemen, *de ſçavans Docteurs* skilfull Doctors.

So then you ſee, that many ſubſtances may be taken integrally, as *un blé*, meaning a corn-field,

un bois a whole foreſt, *une paille* a ſtraw, *un bœuf* a oxe or beeve, *un mouton* a ſheep or whole mutton; and diviſibly into parts, *du blé* ſome corn *du bois* wood, or ſome wood; *de la paille* ſtraw, or ſome ſtraw; *du bœuf* beef, or ſome beefe; *du mouton* mutton, or ſome mutton.

2 When wee ſpeak of the members of the body, following the Latine Syntax, in ſtead of the poſſeſſives (which the Engliſh would uſe) wee muſt uſe the definite articles, as *la teſte me fait mal* my head is ill, or akes; *un tel eſt bleſsé à la teſte* ſuch a one is hurt on his head; and not ſay *ma teſte, à ſa teſte.*

3 The definite Articles are ſet afore words importing action or exerciſe, as *Addonné au jeu*, given to play or gaming: *il aime le jeu de la paume* hee loves tennis-play: *nous deviſons du jeu de la paume*, wee talk of tennis-play: *nous nous exerçons au jeu de la paume*, wee exerciſe our ſelves in tennis-play: ſo *jouer aux dez, à la boule, aux eſchecs* to play at dice, at bowls, at cheſſe; *courir la bague* to run at ring; *aller le trot*, or *au trot*, to trot; *aller le galop*, or *au galop*, to galop.

But the manner of the play or action requires the definite Article *à*, as *Sauter à joints pieds*, to leap with the feet cloſe together: *courir à bride à vallee*, to run with the bridle on the horſe necke: *courir la poſte*, to ride poſte: *tirer des armes*, to fenſe or handle his weapons: *enſeigner la muſique*, to

teach

ach musique: *tailler la pierre*, to cut or carve one. And in like manner, their Nouns verbals ill have the indefinite Article, as *Coureur de poe*, a rider of poste: *tireur d' armes*, a Fenser: *ennigneur de musique*, a teacher of musique: *tailleur de ierre*, a stone-cutter: *un faiseur d' habits*, a maker f apparell.

4 Every partative speech, or comparative taen partatively, is made by the definite Articles pplied to the thing, as *Ceste Dame est la fleur des elles*, this Lady is the flowre of faire ones: *les leons du plus sçavant homme de l' universitè*, the lecures of the skilfullest man in the Vniversitie: *I' ay baillé mon ouvrage à faire au plus excellent ouvrier de la ville*, I have given my work to bee done o the, or by the best workman of the city.

5 When we put the name of the speciall kinde or the whole kinde, it is a definitive speech, requiring the definite Articles; as *L' homme a esté creé à l' image de Dieu*, man was created after the mage of God: *la femme a esté baillee à l' homme our aide*, woman was given to man for an help: *les bouillons de la colere en l' homme produisent de perilleux effects*, the boilings of choler in man produce dangerous effects: *Le cheval est propre à la guerre, comme le bœuf au labourage*, the horse is fit for warre, as the oxe for the plough: *la proprieté du laurier est contre le tonnerre*, the property of the bay-tree is against thunder: *On attribuë une mer-*

merveilleuſe proprieté a la palme, de ſe roidir contre faix, a wonderfull property is attributed to t palme-tree, to reſiſt the more it is preſſed wi weight: *On doute lequel eſt plus dommageable, ou pr fitable l'or, ou le fer*; it is doubted, which is mo hurtfull or profitable of gold or iron: *la gueule perd plus que le glaive*, the throat (that is, ſurfe deſtroieth more than the ſword.

6 Alſo, when wee ſet before proper name ſome Epithet or Adjective, the definite Article i ſet before the Epithet, as *la ſtatue du Dictateur Ce ſar, qui fit la guerre au grand Pompee*, the ſtatue o the Dictator Ceſar, who warred on the grea Pompey. But if wee ſet after the proper name a Epithet or Adjective bearing note of ſpecial pre rogative or preeminence, then the indefinite Ar ticle is ſet before the proper name, and the defi nite *le, la* after it, before the Epithet, as *la ſtatue de Ceſar le Dictateur, qui fit la guerre à Pompee le grand*, the ſtatue of Ceſar the Dictator, who made warre on Pompey the great.

7 Likewiſe, theſe phraſes are emphaticall, *Ceſar le Dictateur, Pompee le grand*, that is, which was Dictator, which had the title of great. Which muſt be noted: for when the Adjective hath not any ſuch emphaſis, but a common quality, and ſimple attribute, there needeth not the definite Article, as *Alexandre jeune & vaillant, deſconfit en battaille Darius treſpuiſant Roy de Perſe*; Alexander being

being yong and valiant, discomfited in battell Darius the most mighty King of Persia. *Monsieur, Madame, Madamoiselle*, doe follow that emphaticall construction; as *Monsieur le Duc*, my Lord Duke; *Madame la Contesse*, my Lady Countesse; *Monsieur le sot*, master sot; *Madame la putain*, Madame or mistresse whore.

8 Lastly, when any Epithet is added to this name *Dieu*, before or after, the definite Article is used, as *I' adore le vray Dieu*, I worship the true God: *le monde est l' ouvrage du Dieu fort*, the world is the workmanship of the strong God: *I' adresse mes priéres au Dieu vivant*, I direct my prayers to the living God: so *l' idole du Dieu Iupiter*. Also the word *seul*, set before *Dieu*, requires the definite Articles, as *le seul Dieu*, the onely God, *du seul Dieu*, of the onely God, *au seul Dieu*, to the onely God: but if *seul* come after, then use the indefinite, as *Dieu seul* God alone, *de Dieu seul* of God alone, *á Dieu seul* to God alone.

The use of indefinite Articles.

First, they are used before proper names, as *la statue de Cesar qui fit la guerre à Pompee*, the statue of Cesar that made war against Pompey: *l' homme est l' image de Dieu*, man is the image of God: *adressez à Dieu vos prieres*, direct to God your praiers. And this Rule is generall; that all proper names of men, months, cities, kingdomes, &c. and all attributes proper to one sole individuall,

are

are construed with the indefinite Articles, as *Le Roy d' Angleterre, d' Espagne*, the King of England, of Spaine. *Ie viens de Paris*, I come from Paris. *Ie suis de Londres*, I am of London, &c. Except some phrases, as when wee say, *Par* or *parmi l' Europe, l' Asie, la France, l' Italie*, through or amidst Europe, Asia, France, Italie; also *à la France, à l' Europe*, to France, to Europe; and indifferently, *les villes de la France*, or *de France*, the cities of France. Also we say, *Le Tibre*, the river Tiber; *le Rhin*, the Rhine; *le Pau*, Po; *le Danube*, Danubius; *le Nil*, Nilus; and indifferently *Tamise* or *la Tamise*, the Thames: also *l' Apenin, les Alpes, les Pyrenees*, the Apenine, Alpes, Pyrenean mountains.

Secondly, indefinite Articles serve to Appellatives left in their generall signification, without any restriction; and that in phrases generally negative, or interrogative, or conditionall, having ordinarily following them *Aucun, quelconque*, or some other equivalent to these; *Ie n' ay secours d' aucun homme*, or *d' homme qui soit*, I have no help of any man, *d' homme quelconque*, of any man whatsoever, *d' homme vivant*, of any man living. *Trouvez vous apparence quelconque en ce propos?* Finde you any likelihood at all in this speech? *Ie ne sçay si je trouveray ami quelconque*, I know not whether I shall finde any friend at all. *Si vous avez besoing de chose que je puisse, ne m' esparguez pas*, if you have need of any thing that I can doe, spare me not, &c.

Third-

Thirdly, these indefinite Articles are used with all Pronounes whatsoever, except the Possessives *Mien, tien, sien*; and *nostre, vostre, leur*, when they are absolute; and the Relative *lequel*, whose Article is inseparable.

The particle *un* a (which some reckon among the Articles) may indifferently be used or not used in such phrases, *Celuy est vray Roy*, or *un vray Roy, qui regit comme pere*, hee is a true King, who ruleth as a father. *De long travail*, or *d'un long travail, heureuse recompence*; of a long labour, a happy recompence.

Masculine, Feminine.

Sing. Nom. Accus. *un, une*: a, an.
Gen. Ablat. *d'un, d'une*: of a, or an; from a, or an; with a, or an.
Dative *à un, à une*: to a, or an; at a, or an; for a, or an.

Strangers, both English and others, doe often falsely use the Articles; namely,

False Articles.	True ones.
De le, for	*Du* before Consonants, as *du pain*, some bread, *du drap*, some cloth. *De l'* before Vowels, as *de l'œil*, of the eye, *de l'or*, of gold, or some gold.
Ę le, for	*Au* before Consonants, as *au Roy*, to the King, *au Chasteau*, to the castle. *à l'* before Vowels, as *à l'œil, à l'homme*, to the eye, to man.

enle,

en le, for { *au, dans le, dedans le* before Consonants, as *au feu*, in the fire. *en l', dans l', dedans l'* before Vowels, *en l'hostel*, in the house.

Des les for *des*, as *la pudicitè des femmes*, the chastity of women.

A les for *aux* or *ès*, as *aller aux jardins*, to go into the garden: *se pourmener ès jardins*, to walk in the gardens.

En les for *aux* and *ès*, *dans les*, *dedans les*, as *dans les livres*, *ès livres*, in books.

Vse the true, and avoid the false. You shall finde more of Articles in particular, in the syntax.

Chap. III.

Of a Noune.

NOunes are eyther Substantives; as *Homme, femme, Roy, royne*: or Adjectives; as *Prudent, prudente, Verteux, vertueuse.*

Nounes have only three Genders, Masculine, Feminine, and Common: for the knowledge of which Genders, obserue the rules following:

1 All Nounes Adjectives which only end in *e* feminine, are of the common gender, that is to say, are appliable to substantives, as well of the masculine as of the feminine gender: for Neuter all the French have not, but comprehend it under the masculine. Of these, a verie great number do come from Latine Adjectives, of which some in *ilis*;

; as *Facile, utile, docile, fertile, sterile, aimable, a-*
ble, humble, lisible, possible, delectable, affable, rede-
le recevable, &c. some in *bris, stis, stus, stris*: as
nebre, celebre, triste, modeste, celeste, chaste, juste, illu-
e, &c. some in *dus, dis*: as *Humide, solide, rude,*
de, vuide, palle, superbe, &c. some in *plex*: as *Simple,*
ble, triple, quadruple, and so forth to *centuple*; al-
ſonple. some in *lis, lus*: as *Fidele, rebelle, imbecille*.
acris, arius: as *Militaire, temeraire, ordinaire, vul-*
ire, contraire, &c. some in *icus*: as *Publicque, an-*
que, pudicque, &c. whoſe maſculine may alſo in-
ferently be in *ic*, or *icq*; as *Politic, pudic*, &c. ſome
er and *rus*; as *Acre, aigre, maigre, alaigre, ſalubre,*
rtifére, peſtifére, alexitére, deletére, propre, ſobre, li-
e, yvre, pauvre, aſpre, proſpere, adultere, ſyncere, ſevere,
are, rare, ignare. some in *mus, mis*: as *Extreme, inti-*
, ferme, infirme, ſublime, quātiéme, deuxiéme, troiſiéme
c. infinitely. and *Miſte, artiſte, ſophiſte, atheiſte, do-*
tiſte, legiſte, &c. and others of diverſe formes: as
aſche, morne, ſombre, terne, borgne, bigle, or *bicle, a-*
ugle, jeune, ſage, foible, trouble, comble, bleſme, riche,
iche, proche, croche, courbe, ſale, louche, viſte, leſte,
rougne, fantaſque, moite, mince, colere, mauſade, fade,
lade, grave, brave, &c.

Alſo of the common gender are all the cardi-
ll numbers from *deux, trois*, &c. infinitely.

The ſecond ſort of Adjectives, are ſuch as
ve two terminations; the one maſculine, the
her feminine: them of the maſculine, are ever

one

one of these, *Eau, c, d, é, f, g, i, l, n, r, ſ, t, u, x, y:*

Such as end in *eau*, do forme their feminin *elle*; as *Beau, belle; Gemeau* or *jumeau, gemelle* o *melle, nouveau, nouvelle:* and these also afore ſtantives beginning with a vowell, have the ſculines in *el*; as *Bel œil*, a fair eye, *Nouvel ouvr* a new worke.

Such as end in *C*, have their feminines in as *Sec, ſeiche. Blanc, blanche. Franc, franche:* exc *Flac, ſlacque. Grec, grecque. Porc, porcque;* and ſuch end in *ic*, as *Ruſtic, ruſticque*, &c.

In *d*, taketh *e* to it: as *Grand, grande. Rond, r de. Froid, froide*, &c. Except *Nud, nuë.*

In *é* taketh alſo *e*, as *Aimé, aimee. Donné, don*

In *f* doe change the ſame into *ve*, as *Vif, v* or (after ſome) *Vifve, veuf, veuve* or *veufve. Ne neuve. Grief, griéve. Brief, briéve. Souëf, ſonëve*, & Here note the difference between *Neuf* and *Ne veau*; that *Neuf* is ſaid of things newly made art, and not yet put to uſe, as *des ſouliers neufs*, ne ſhooes; *une maiſon neuve*, a new houſe. *Nouve* is ſaid of things when they firſt come to evid or ſhew themſelves, as *Des fruits nouveaux*, new fruits; *du vin nouveau*, new wine; *une nouvelle fa çon d' habits*, a new faſhion of apparell; *un livr nouveau*, a new book.

In *g*, as *long longue.*

In *i* and *y* they take *e*, as *Ioli jolie, ami amie, nour ri nourrie, flori florie.*

In

In *L* commonly adde to *le*, as *Gentil, gentille. Vermeil, vermeille. Pareil, pareille*: yet where *l* is not liquid, a ſingle *l* may ſerve; as *General, generale. Eternel, eternele*, &c. except *Tel, telle. Quel, quelle.*

In *n* ſuch as are in *on*, adde to *ne*, as *Bon, bonne. Felon, felonne. Mignon, mignonne*: the others doubles not the *n*, as *Chreſtien, chreſtiéne. Certain, certaine. Benin, benigne. Fin, fine. Plein, pleine. Mien, miéne*, &c.

In *S*, when *i* comes afore it, adde to *e*, as *Gris, griſe. Bis, biſe. Niais, niaiſe. Mauvais, mauvaiſe*: except *Frais, fraiche. Eſpais, eſpaiſſe. Lis, liſe*, and *liſſe*. when another vowell commeth before it, the *s* is doubled: as *Bas, baſſe. Gras, graſſe. Gros, groſſe. Expres, expreſſe*: except *Ras, raſe*, & all the participles, *Clos, cloſe*, &c.

In *T*, ſuch as are in *et*, doe commonly double the *t*, as *Net, nette. Complet, complette*. the other terminations have but a ſingle *t*, as *Prudent, prudente. Eſtroit, eſtroite. Subit, ſubite. Sot, ſote. Hault, haulte*, &c.

In *u*, taketh *e* to it, as *Pointu pointuë. Velu veluë, ſoſtigué, menuë, fueilluë*, &c.

In *X*, it is changed into *ſe*, as *Heureux, heureuſe, jaloux, jalouſe*; Except *Doux douce, faux fauce* or *fauſſe, roux rouſſe* or *rouce, perplex perplexe*.

Many ſubſtantives maſculine doe forme from them others feminine, according to the rules afore-

foregoing of adiectives, as *Cousin cousine, Voi voisine, Conseiller conselliere, Marchand marchan Mercier merciere, François françoise, Anglois anglo Chien chienne, Lion lionne, Puceau pucelle, Marq reau marquerelle, Nourrisson nourrissonne,* used bo actively and passively, *Nourrice* onely active and *Nourricier nourriciere* actively, &c. which so serve for adiectives if occasion serve, as *vi marchande*, a marchant towne.

Also such as end in *Eur*, are formed diversly into *euse, esse, ice*, &c. as *Menteur menteuse & mente resse, Demandeur demandeuse & demanderesse, Sa veur sauveuse sauveresse, Pecheur pecheresse, Flate flateuse, Procureur procuresse & procuratrice, Tute tutrice, Protecteur protectrice, Inventeur inventrice Curateur curatrice, Dominateur dominatrice, Empe reur Imperatrice & emperiére*; Also *Prieur prieu Serviteur servante, Gouverneur gouvernante.*

Such as end in *e*, commonly change it into *esse* as *Maistre maistresse, Hoste hostesse, Prince princesse Comte comtesse, Prestre prestresse, Moine moinesse, Abb abbesse*; and though *yvrongne, borgne, & belistre* b common, yet wee say also *yvrongnesse, borgnesse, belistresse* for the feminine; also we forme *Clere clergesse, Duc duchesse, Larron larronne & larronnesse Dieu deesse.* Moreover we forme *Roy roine & reine Loup louve, renard renarde*, &c.

But the females of some beastes, have not their names formed from them of their males, as *Che val*

val an horſe, *jument* or *cavale* a mare, *bongre*, a gelded horſe, *guildin* an Engliſh guelding, *poulin* or *poulain* a coult, *Cerf* a ſtagge, *biche* a hinde, *Sanglier* a wild Bore, *Laye* a wild ſow, *Marcaſſin* a grice or young boare, *Verrat* a tame boare, *truye* a ſow, *Porc* or *porceau*, a hogge, *cochon* a pig, and *coche*, a ſow-pigge, or ſometime a ſow ſuckling her pigs; *Bouc*, a hee-goate, *Chevre*, a ſhee-goate, *Chevreau*, a kid; *Belier*, a ramme, *ouaille* or *brebis*, an ewe, *agneau*, a lambe; *Mouton*, a weather; *Taureau*, a bull, *vache*, a cow, *veau*, a calfe, *Bœuf*, an oxe, *bouveau*, a bullocke, *geniſſe*, a heifer; *Iars*, a Gander. *Oye*, a Gooſe. *Oyſon*, a Goſlin or greene Gooſe, *Coq*, a Cock. *Poule*, a Hen, *Poulet*, a Cockrell or Pullet. *Chapon*, a Capon. *Hutaudeau*, a Caponnet, or a yong Capon. *Poulſin* ſignifieth not only a Chicken, but alſo the yongones of all Birds, as of an Eagle, Raven, &c.

Genders of Nounes Subſtantives.

TO know the genders of Subſtantives, ſuch as have good skill in the Latine tongue, may obſerve this for a generall rule, That they have for the moſt part, eſpecially thoſe that are derived from the Latine, the ſame gender as they have in Latine, that is, the Maſculines and Neuters in Latine are Maſculines in French, and the Feminine in Latine is the ſame in French. This rule hath ſome exceptions, yet may leade the learner

(desirous of expedition) verie farre in this point.

But he which desireth a more exact guide, must examine well the rules following:

1 Of the Masculine gender are the names of Men; as *Pierre*, Peter; *Iaques*, Iames: of Angels, as *Gabriel*: of Divels and of fabulous gods, as *Astarot*, *Iupiter*: of the Offices of men, as *Roy*, *eveſque*, a Bishop, or *Feure*, a Goldsmith. *Chantre*, a singing man, &c. of Moneths, as *Ianuier*: of Dayes, as *Dimanche*, Sunday: of Trees, as *Cheſne*, an Oake. *Freſne*, an Ash, &c. except *Palme*, a Palme tree. *Vigne*, a Vine. *Eſpine*, a Thorne. *Ronce*, a Bramble. *Bourdaine*, a low French hedge-tree so cald; *Yeuſe*, holm Oke, feminines. Of Monies or coin, as *Eſcu*, a crowne. *Franc*, a piece of twentie Sous. except *Piſtole*, a Piſtolet. *Portugaiſe*, *Iocondale*, a Doller. *Reale*, a Ryall. *Maille*, halfe a Denier, feminines.

2 Of the Masculine Gender also are all Adjectives made Substantives, as *le long*, *le large*, *le double*, *le triple*, *le haut*, *le bas*, &c. the long, the large, &c. also the Infinitives of Verbs taking the nature of Substantives, as *le boire*, drinking; *le manger*, eating; *le dormir*, sleeping, &c. also Adverbs, *le pis*, the worse or worst; *le mieulx*, the better or best; *le plus*, the more or most; *le moins*, the lesse or least, &c. *Le trop d' aiſe mondaine, & le peu de ſoin de ſervir Dieu, emmene pluſieurs à perdition*: Too much worldly ease, and the little care to serve God, brings many to destruction.

3 Con-

3 Contrariwiſe, of the Feminine Gender are all names of women, as *Aliſon*, Alice; *Ieanne*, Iane or Ioan, &c. of poeticall goddeſſes, Nymphs and muſes, as *Iunon*, *Pallas*, *Calliope*, *Calliſto*, &c. of offices attributed to women, as *Roine*, a Queen; *Nymphe*, a Nymph; *Ducheſſe*, a Dutcheſſe; *lingere*, a ſeamſter, &c. of fruits, as *Ceriſe*, a cherrie; *groiſelle*, a gooſeberry; *noix*, a walnut, &c. Except *Coing*, *abricot*, *citron*, *timon*, *marron*, *raiſin*, *citrangule*, *melon*, *concombre*, *pepon*, *poivre*, *gingembre*, *genievre*, *naveau*, *raifort*, *porreau*, *oingnon*, *gland*; all Maſculines.

4 Of the Feminine Gender alſo are all the names of vertues, as *force*, ſtrength; *prudence*, prudence, &c. and of qualities (though ſome of them come of Latine Maſculines in *or*) as *douleur* griefe, *chaleur* heat, *hauteur* height, *peſanteur* heavineſſe or weight, &c. Except *Heur*, *malheur*, *cœur*, *pleur*, *honneur*, *labeur*, Maſc. and *erreur*, *humeur*, Common. Alſo except Verbals Actives in *eur*, as *Autheur*, *Docteur*, &c. The proper names of countries and cities conſidered in themſelves, doe follow their terminations, as *Dannemarc*, *Poitou*, *Orleans*, *Rouën*, &c. are Maſculine becauſe of their Maſculine termination; *Bretagne*, *France*, *Toloſe*, Feminines.

5 To knowe then the Genders of Nounes by their terminations, obſerve, that ſuch as end in *b*, *c*, *d*, and *é* Maſculine, are

Maſc. as *Plomb*, *ſac*, *bec*, *nid*, *bord*, *prè*, *congé*, &c.

Except all ſuch as end in *té* and *tié*, coming from Latine words in *tas* and *tia*, as *Bonté*, *beauté*, *pitié*, *moitié*, &c. which are Feminines: yet *Eſté*, *coſté* and *paſté*, are Maſculines; and *Duché*, *Comté*, *Eveſché*, *Archeveſché*, are common.

Be In *Be* Fem. as *Robbe*, *jambe*, *fourbe*, &c. except *Globe*, *garbe*, *limbe*, *verbe*, *proverbe*, Maſc.

Ce In *Ce* Fem. as *Grace*, *piece*, *lice*, *croce*, *puce*, *apparence*, *herce*, *eſcorce*, *ſource*, *ſauce*, &c. except *pouce*, *prepuce*, *commerce*, *divorce*, *ſilence*, *negoce*, all in *ice*, as *benefice*, *edifice*, *caprice*, *vice*, *ſacrifice*, *exercice*, *precipice*, *ſervice*, Maſculines; and *bonace*, *negoce*, *office* and *populace*, Common.

De In *De* Fem. as *Eſtoccade*, *mode*, *ride*, *bande*, *ſonde*, *corde*, *bourde*, *chiquenaude*, &c. except *Exorde*, *coude*, *prelude*, *remede*, *monde*, *ſubſide*, Maſc. and *aide*, *camerade*, *garde*, and all in *ide*, as *guide*, *homicide*, *parricide*, Common.

ée In *ée* Fem. as *Allée*, *chauſsée*, *pipée*, &c. Except *Trophee*, Maſc.

Fe & Ph In *Fe*, *phe* Fem. as *Grife*, *eſtoffe*, *coiffe*, *piaffe*, *greffe*, a graffe, &c. except *Griffe* a kinde of dog, *Greffe* the place of a Regiſters Office, *triomphe*, *Epitaphe*, *philoſophe*.

Ge In *Ge* Fem. as *vandange*, *eſponge*, *targe*, *gorge*, *courge*, *ſauge*, *cage*, *plage*, *image*, *aage*, *page* the page of a leaf, *rage*, *neige*, &c. except all others (ſaving the above-recited) ending in *age*, *ege*, *iege* and *eige*, as *gage*, *heritage*, *herbage*, *privilége*, *manége*, *piége*, *pleige*, &c.

&c. Masc. except also *Ange, lange, change, linge, ſinge, cierge, concierge, ſonge, orge, vouge, juge, refuge, litige, veſtige, preſtige, prodige, horloge, menſonge*, Masc.

In *Che* Fem. as *Gaſche, meſche*, &c. except *Acroſtiche, panache, manche*, the haft or handle of a thing, *trenche-plume*, masc. *Accroche, coche, friche*, common.

In *ie* Fem. as *Scie, maladie*, &c.

In *Le* Fem. as *Table, bale, gabelle, bible, fangle, perle, temple*, the temples of the head; *Colle, capriole, cedule, boucle, mouſle, voile* a Sayle, *aigle, eſpingle, ongle, ville, meule*, &c. Except *Buſle, branſle, cable, conventicule, angle, cercle, crocodile, comble, crible, couvercle, domicile, froncle, habitacle, haſle, maſle, merle, miracle, muſcle, poiſle* a Stove. *muſle, meuſle, moule, module, obſtacle, oracle, preambule, protocole, poiſle* a Canopie. *pinacle, rable, ruble, roole* or *roule, ſable, ſeigle, ſiecle, ſcrupule, ſouſle, ſtyle, ſpectacle, tabernacle, temple* a temple. *trouble, voile*, a vaile, *zele*, maſculines. *example, idole, obole*, common.

In *me* Fem. as *Ame, paume. cime, eſcume, ſomme*, a ſumme, *arme, forme, ferme*. &c. Except *Anagramme, apophthegme, axiome, abiſme, alarme, blaſme, bapteſme, bitume, baulme, catechiſme, cataplaſme, carme, charme, crime. empyreume, phantaſme*, or *fantaſme*, or *fantoſme, flegme*, or *phlegme, germe, gendarme, homme, legume, pſalme, quareſme, regime, ſynonyme, ſomme*, ſleepe. *ſophiſme, royaume, terme, tome, volume, poëme*, masc.

Ne In *ne* Fem. as *Cane, ſepmaine*, &c. Except *Antimoine, crane, capricorne, cerne, cigne, ſigne, peigne, proſne, regne, patrimoine, aſne, throſne, yvrongne.*

Pe In *pe* Fem. as *Nape, pipe*, &c. Except *Principe, jaſpe, creſpe.*

Re In *re* Fem. as *Tare, cire, pecore, froidure, cendre, eſguiere, balaffre, chambre, anchre, feneſtre*, &c. Except *Ambre, aire*, a neſt, *antre, auditoire, affaire, Baptiſtere, beurre, biévre, Characte're, cancre, chaucre, chanure, chapitre, catharre, cimetiére, cimeterre, centre, ciboire, cheveſtre, cidre, chifre, ciſtre*, or *ſiſtre, cloiſtre, clyſtere, coffre, congre, conſiſtoire, coriandre, cuivre, coutre, doüaire, empire, eſclandre, emplaſtre, feurre*, or *foarre, feutre, fifre, goufre, genre, gendre, gingembre, goinfre, geniévre, havre, hongre, impropere, luſtre, lierre, liévre, luminaire, livre*, a booke, *Maſſacre, marbre, martyre, murmure, myſtere, nombre, oratoire, opprobre, parterre, plaſtre, populaire pore, pourpre poyvre, pulpitre, offre, ordre, quarre, repaire, regiſtre, reiſtre, ruſtre, ſalaire, ſire, ſceptre, ſepulchre, ſuaire, ſoufre*, or *ſouphre, ſommaire, ſucre, tertre, timbre, tiltre, territoire, theatre, tigre, tonnere, ventre, veſpre, verre, vinaigre, vitupere, vlcere*, maſc. *Arbitre, anceſtre, navire*, common.

Se In *ſe* Fem. as *Chemiſe, choſe, ruſe*, &c. Except *vaſe, dioceſe, aiſe*, maſc.

Te In *te* Fem. as *Rate, ſavatte, pinette*, &c. Except *Acte, architecte, compte, conte, geſte, giſte, haſte*, a ſpit; *hoſte, pretexte, texte, tumulte, pilote, poſte*, for *poſtillon*,

n. artiſte. ſophiſte.

In *ue* & *ve* Fem. as *Dague, caſague, pigue, bave: reve: rue: jouë.* Except *Catalogue: maſque: flaſque: antique: colloque, dogue: prologue: dialogue: maigue: beliſque, conclave, eunuque. pedagogue. fleuve. glaive,* maſc. & *Begue, prodigue.* com. *U e*

In *ye* Fem. as *Haye, playe, pluye,* &c. Except *ſaye.* *Ye*

In *f, g, h,* maſc. as *Chef, eſquif, rang, joug, alphabeth,* &c. Except *Clef, nef, ſoif,* feminines. *f, g. & h*

In *i, y, l,* & *m,* maſc. as *Souci, tournoy, bal, renom,* &c. Except *merci, loy, foy, paroy, faim,* fem. *i, y. l, m.*

In *n* maſc. as *Caban, matroquin.* &c. Except verballs in *çon, ſon,* & *ion* come from latins in *io,* as *contagion, opinion, occaſion, paſſion, probation, complexion,* and others of like forme, as *Leçon, façon, rançon, tançon, mariſſon, moiſſon, guariſſon, raiſon, oraiſon, maiſon, priſon, trahiſon, demangeaiſon, venaiſon, fenaiſon, foiſon, paſmoiſon, cloiſon, boiſſon;* alſo *main, nonmain, fin, putain.* *N*

In *p, q, r,* maſc. as *Drap, coup, coq, acier, gibier,* &c. Except *Mer, cour, chair, tour,* a tower, *cuillier,* and ſubſtantives of quality and quantitie in *eur,* as *douleur, douceur, faveur, noirceur, longueur, largeur,* fem. *Amour,* common. *p. q. r.*

In *ſ, t, u,* maſc. as *Lacs, frimas, rabat, buffet, lieu, trou,* &c. Except *Souris, brebis, vis,* a ſtaire or ſpindle of a preſſe, *fois, dent, gent, mort, jument, nuict, hart, part, foreſt, naict, vertu, glu, peau, eau, tribu.* fem. *ſ, t. u.*

In

X In *x* Fem. as *Poix, noix, paix, voix, croix, toux*,
Except *faix, couroux, prix*, masc.

Z In *z* masc. as *Nez*, &c.

It appeareth that some in changing their nification, do also change gender, as these:

Tour	a turne, masc. a tower, fem.	*Coche*,	a coach: masc. a sow, fem.
Satyre,	a fabulous woodgod, masc. a Poem, fe.	*Manche*,	a handle, ma a sleeve, fe nine.
Voile,	a vaile, masc. a saile, fem.	*Greffe*,	a place where Registers office kept: masc. a graffe, fem.

Temple, a temple, or Church, masculine.
the temples of the head, fem.

Faiste, the top of any thing, masc.
Feste, a feast, or holy-day, fem.
} of different orthog phy.

Haste,	a spit, masc. hast, fem.	*Page*,	a page or youth, m a side of a leafe, fe
Livre,	a book, masc. a poũd, feminine.	*Poisle*,	a canopie, or stove, masc. a frying-pan, fem

Periode, for the end or declining of a thing, ma
for the point in a sentence, fem.

Trompette, a trumpetter, masc, & a trumpet, fem

Enseigne, an Ensigne-bearer, masc. and the En sign

e it ſelfe, ſem. So *Cornette*, a Cornet of horſe, *inelle*, a ſentinell, *Guette*, a watch, *Guide*, a guide, referred both to the perſon, and to the ng.

Compariſon.

"He comparative degree, both of Nounes and Adverbs, is formed by adding *Plus* to poſitive; and the ſuperlative by adding *Tres* re: as *Iuſte, plus juſte, treſiuſte: Chaſte, plus chaſte, treſchaſte*: ſo the adverbs, *Iuſtement, plus juſtement, treſiuſtement.* Theſe following alter their mparative, but not the ſuperlative.

	Good.	well.	evill.	ill.
oſitive,	*Bon,*	*Bien.*	*Mauvais,*	*Mal.*
ompa-	*Meilleur, mieux,*		*Pire,*	*Pis,*
tive,				
uperla-	*Tresbon.*	*Tresbien.*	*Treſmavais,*	*treſmal.*
ve.				

ittle, ſmall, little, few· | We may ſay alſo in the
of. *Petit.* *Peu,* | comparative *plus mauvais, plus petit, plus mal,* or
om. *Moindre, moins,* | *pirement*; but not *plus*
up. *Treſpetit, Treſpeu.* |

on, nor *plus bien*, nor *plus peu*; for *Meilleur, mieux*, nd *Moins* are unvariable.

ien, trop, beaucoup, par trop, ſerve before compatives, to increaſe their force, as *longè*, & *multò* with the Latins; *Tu es trop plus heureux que ſage*, hou art much more happy than wiſe. *Ceſar fut*

bien

bien plus hardi que Pompee, Cesar was farre valiant than Pompey.

Homme de Bien, Femme de bien, receive bo comparative and superlative forme, as *Plu me de bien*, a more honest man, *treshomme de* a most honest man, *tresfemme de bien*, a mo nest woman.

Tous & *toutes*, all receive the adjunction of as if they were superlatives, as *Trestous*, *treste* all, and every one.

Grandissime is often used for *tresgrand*; and so time we say, *Doctissime*; also wee say to Prin *Serenissime*, *illustrissime*, and to Prelates *Reve dissime*.

Of Diminutives.

MAny nounes, both substantives and a ctives, receive a diminitive forme.

Such as end in *n*, *t*, *r*, *e*, *d*, doe make their minutives in *et*, or *eau*; as *Iardin*, a garden, *jardi* a little garden, *Garson*, a boy, *garsonnet garsonne* a little boy, *fin finet*, *flateur flatereau*, *Procureur*, *curaceau*, *advocat*, *advocaceau*, *arbre*, *arbrisseau*, *v me*, *vermisseau*, *Larron*, *larronneau*, *rouge*, *rouget*, a (with sub-diminution) *Brun*, *bruneau*, *brunel mignard*, *mignardet*, *mignardelet*, *sergent*, *sergente sergentelet*, *enfant*, *enfançon*, *enfantelet*, *homme*, *ho meau*, *hommet*, *hommelet*.

In *ier* changeth into *ot*, as *Mercier*, *mercerot*, *ch*

archerot, &c. Also *Chien cagnot.*

au changeth into *let*, as *Couteau, coutelet, man-*
, mantelet, chasteau, chastelet.

into *chet*, as *Sac sachet, blanc, blanchet, blanche-*

or *x* into *set, selet*, as *Gras, grasset, grasselet.*

ome into *on*, as *Clerc clergeon, haim hameçon,*
, escusson, asne, asnon, chat, chaton.

Nounes feminines are formed into *ette*, as
me femmette femmelette, maison maisonnette, &c.

some few into *elle*, as *Ruë, ruëlle, rouë, rouëlle,*
e, tonnelle, prune, prunelle. Proper names receive
iminutive forme; so becomming rusticall, or
nicke-names, as *Iaques* Iames, *Iacquet* & fem.
quette, Iean Iohn *Ianot, Ianin* (applyed to a
kold) & fem. *Ianneton, Pierre* Peter, *Perrot*, &
n. *Perrette Perrichon*; *Philippes philippot, Mar-*
rite margot, Charles charlot charlette, &c.

We often also expresse the diminutive forme
the words *Petit, petite*, little, as *Petit homme, pe-*
femme; and with both, as *Petit livret*, a little
all booke, *petit cavallot, petit larroneau, petit*
rongnet, petit pendardeau.

The plurall number of Nounes.

The plurall number of Nonnes is formed, by
adding *s, x*, or *z*, to the singular; thus:
Such as end in *ay, ou, oy, uy, e*, fem. *f, g, i, m, n, p, q,*
t, u, take *s*, to make them pluralls, as *Ray, rais.*

Roy

Roy rois, Clou clous, Estuy estuis, &c. chang into *i*.

All in *é* masculine adde to *z*, as *Bonté bo Aimé aimez*.

Nounes in *al, ail, el, eul, ouïl* change the *l* i *ux*, or *x*, as *Mal maux, Ail aux, Bail baux, tr travaux, canal canaux, cheval chevaux, ciel c viel vieux* (which is also sometime used for gular) *Ayeul ayeux, Genoüil genoux, Verroüil roux; Oeil yeux*, &c.

Nounes in *eau, eu*, take *x* to make them p ralls, as *Eau eaux, joyau joyaux, jeu jeux, feu fe lieu lieux*.

Such as end in *s, x, z* in the singular, chan not in the plurall, as *Bas, ris, gros, divers, Pal courroux, jaloux, nez*, &c.

Note that all singulars in *nt*, may change th *t* into *s*, as *Prudent prudens, sçavant sçavans*.

Lastly, some nounes are onely singulars, *Lasit, miel, chair, liberalité, fiel, sel, mousturde, c lere, amere, foy, salut*; and some onely pluralls, *Ciseaux, tenailles, pincettes, mouchettes, nopces, a cestres, funerailles, obseques*.

The declension of Nounes.

NOunes are declined onely by application the Articles, as before in the Articles shewed; but for the better understanding of t learner, take here the examples, and first of substantive integral, beginning with a consonat

Ma

Masculine.

Singular,		Plurall,	
Roy, King.		*Roys*	
un roy, a King.		*des rois*	Kings.
le roy, the King.		*les rois*, the Kings.	
de Roy		*de Rois*,	of kings.
d'un roy,	of a king.	*des rois*,	of the
du roy,	of the king.	kings.	
à Roy		*à Rois*,	
à un roy	to a king.	*à des rois*,	to kings
au roy,	to the king.	*aux rois*,	to the kings
ô Roy,	ô king	*ô Rois*,	ô kings.
ô le roy,	ô the king.	*ô les rois*,	ô the kings

Feminine.

Singular,		Plurall,	
Femme,	woman.	*Femmes*,	weomen.
une femme,	a womã.	*des fẽmes*	
la femme,	the womã.	*des fẽmes*,	the weomẽ.
de femme,	woman s,	*de fẽmes*,	of wom.
d'une femme,	of a womã	*des femmes*,	of
de la femme,	of ẽ womã.	the women.	
à femme,	to	*à femmes*	
woman,		*à des fem-*	to women.
à une femme,		*mes*,	
to a woman		*aux femmes*,	to the
à la femme,	to	weomen.	
the woman.			
ô femme,	ô woman.	*ô femmes*,	ô weomen
ô la femme,	ô the womã	*ô les femmes*,	ô the
		women	

An

An example of a masculine noune, beginning with a vowell.

Nominat. & *Accusat.*	*Arbre*, tree	*Gen.* & *Abl.*	*d'arbre*, of tree.
	un arbre, a tree.		*d'un arbre*, of a tree.
	l'arbre, the tree.		*de l'arbre*, of the tree.

Dat. *à arbre*, *à un arbre*, to a tree.
à l'arbre, to the tree.

Secondly, for substances and things considered by parts and portions, and bearing the name of the whole, follow these examples:

Nom. & *Accus.*
Or, gold, or some gold. *blé*, Corne, or some corne.
de l'or
l'or, the gold. *du blé*, some corne.
le ble, the corne.
paille, *de la pailles*, straw, or some straw.
La paille, the straw.

Genit. & *Ablat.*
d'or, of, or from gold.
de l'or of the, or from the gold.
blé, of, or from corne.
du blé, of the, or from the corne.
de paille, of, or from straw.
de la paille, of the, from the straw.

Dative.
à or, to, or at gold.
à de l'or, to some gold.
à l'or, to the gold.

à bl

à blé, to corne.
à du blé, to some corne.
au blé, to the corne.
à paille, to straw.
à de la paille, to some straw.
à la paille, to the straw.

The plurals follow, in all points, the examples ove propounded: for in all nounes, the artis plurall are alike. Adjectives set afore substanves, are (as before in the articles is taught) artied with *à* & *de* only, as *c'est de bon blé*, it is good orne, *j'ay parlé à de vertueux princes*, I have spoen to vertuous Princes.

Tout the substantive is thus declined in the ngular number onely: *Tout*, all, or whole, *un ut*, a totall or whole, *le tout*, the whole, *de tout*, *un tout*, of a whole, *du tout*, of the whole, *à tout*, *un tout*, to a whole, *au tout*, to the whole. The djective, thus: *Tout*, all, *de tout*, of all, *à tout*, to ll, *Tous*, all, *de tous*, of all, *à tous*, to all. so fem. *oute*, *de toute*, *à toute*, *Toutes*, *de toutes*, *à toutes*. lso *un* is thus declined: *un*, one, *l'un*, the one, *d'un*, of one, *de l'un*, of the one, *à un*, to one, *à l'un*, to he one; pl. *uns*, some, *les uns*, some; *d'uns*, *des uns*, of some; *à uns*, *aux uns*, to some: so the feminine *ne*.

Deux, *trois*, *quatre*, &c. taken substantively, for the character of their number, admit an article before them; as *un deux*, a two, *le deux*, the two,

meaning the figure of 2. ſo *un trois*, or *le trois* three, *un quatre*, or *le quatre*, is 4, &c. But p the plurall, they are adjectives, articled th *Deux*, *les deux*, *de deux*, *des deux*, *à deux*, *aux de* and ſo of the others.

Of nounes of number.

THe Cardinal numbers are theſe, *un*, maſc, fem. *deux*, 2, *trois*, 3. *quatre*, 4. *cinq*, 5. *ſix*, 6. *ſ* 7. *huict*, 8. *neuf*, 9. *dix*, 10. *onze*, 11. *douze*, 12. *trei* 13. *quatorze*, 14. *quinze*, 15. *ſeize*, 16. *dixſept*, venteene, *dixhuit*, eighteene, *dixneuf*, nineteen *vingt*, twenty, *vingt & un*, twenty one, &c. *tren* thirty; *quarante*, 40. *cinquante*, fifty; *ſoixan* ſixtie, or threeſcore; *ſeptante*, ſeventie, or *ſoi ante* and *dix*, threeſcore and ten, *huitante*, or *octa ta*, eightie, or *quatre vingts*, foureſcore; *nonant* ninety; or *quatre vingts & dix*, foureſcore an tenne; *Cent*, an hundred; *deux cens*, two hundre &c. *Mille*, a thouſand, *deux mille*, two thouſan &c. *un million*, a million, *dix millions*, ten million *un milliard*, or *milliace*, a thouſand millions. Whe you ſee that *vingt*, *cent*, *million*, and *milliard*, ad mit the plurall forme, as *ſix vingts*, ſixe ſcore, *tro cens*, three hundred, *ſept millions*, ſeven million &c. *Cent* is ſometimes a ſubſtantive, as *un cen d'œufs*, an hundred of egges; *Mille* is ever an ad jective, as *mille hommes*, a thouſand men; but *mil lier* is a ſubſtantive, as *un millier d'hommes*, a thou

ſand

nd of men: *Million* & *milliard*, *million*, are al-
ayes ſubſtantives.

Ordinall numbers are *Premier premiere*, firſt; *Se-
nd ſeconde*, or *deuxiéme*, ſecond; *Tierſ tierce*, or
roiſiéme, third; *Quart quarte*, or *quatriéme*, fourth;
Quint quinte or *cinquiéme*, fift; *Sixiéme*, ſixt, *Septi-
ſme*, &c. infinitely, made of the Cardinall by put-
ing to *iéme* or *ieſme*; all which, that ſo end, are
f the common gender.

Proportionall, as *Simple*, *double*, *triple*, *quadruple*,
or *quatruple*, made of the Latine, by omitting the
x. Collectives, as *Quatrain*, *ſixain*, *dixain*, &c.
Adverbiall, as *une fois*, once, *deux fois*, twice,
trois fois, thrice; *quatre fois*, foure times, &c.

CHAP. IV.

Of a Pronoune.

PRonounes perſonals are *Ie moy*, *tu toy*, *il luy*,
elle, *Soy*, & *moy-meſme*, *toy-meſme*, *ſoy-meſme*.

Demonſtratives, *Luy*, *elle*, *ce*, *ceſte*, *celuy*, *celle*,
ceſtuy or *cetuy*, *cetuy-cy*, *cette-cy*, *cetuy-là*, *cette-là*,
celuy-cy, *celuy-la*, *celle-là*, *cecy*, *cela*.

Poſſeſſives, *Mon ma*, *ton ta*, *ſon ſa*, *mien mienne*,
tien tienne, *ſien ſienne*, *noſtre*, *voſtre*, *leur*. Re-
latives and interrogatives, *Luy*, *elle*, *iceluy*, *icelle*,
qui, *quee*, *quoy*, *quel*, *quelle*, *lequel*, *laquelle*, and the
participles relatives, *y*, *en*, *dont*. Indefinits, *quelque*,
quelcun, *quelcune*, *aucun aucune*, *chaque chacun*, *cha-
cune*, *quiconque*, *quelconque*; *autre*, *autruy*, *nul nulle*,

and *pas-un*, *pas-une perſonne*.

Pronounes have two ſorts of caſes; the c
junctive, and the abſolute; the conjunctive
joyned with verbs or nounes ſubſtantives, a
eſt, he is, *cette femme*, this woman; the abſolute
uſed alone abſolutely, or in anſwer of a queſtio
as *qui a fait cela?* who hath done that? *Iuy*,
Voilà une belle maiſon, there is a faire houſe: C
la noſtre, it is ours. Where you may note, th
the conjunctive nominatives, admit no art
cle, but the abſolute of poſſeſſives doe.

Perſonall pronounes are of the common gen
der, and are thus declined.

The firſt perſon, *Ie* and *moy*, I.

	Conjunct.	*abſolut.*		*Conj.*	*abſo.*
Sing.	*Nomi.*	*Ie: Moy*	Pl.	*Nous*,	*nous*
	Gen. Abl.	*de moy,*			*de nous.*
	Da.	*Me, moy, à moy*		*Nous:*	*à nous.*
	Accu.	*Me, moy,*		*Nous:*	*nous.*
	Voca.	*ô Moy.*			*ô nous.*

The ſecond perſon, *Tu* and *toy*, thou.

	Conjunct.	*Abſol.*		*Conjun.*	*Abſol.*
Sin.	*Nom.*	*Tu: toy,*	Pl.	*Vous.*	*vous.*
	Gen. Abl	*de Toy,*			*de vous.*
	Dat.	*te, toy, à toy,*		*Vous:*	*à vous,*
	Accu.	*Te, Toy,*		*Vous;*	*vous,*
	Voc.	*ô Toy.*			*ô vous.*

The

Conjunct. absolut.		Conjunct. Absol
Nomi. Il: luy,	Pl.	Ils: eux,
Gen. Abl. de luy,		d'eux.
Dat. luy; à luy.		leur, à eux,
Accu. le: luy.		les: eux
Voc. O luy.		à eux.

The third person *il, luy*, he, masculine; and *elle*, shee, feminine.

Conjun. absol.		Conjun. absa.
Nomi. Elle: elle,	Pl.	Elles, elles,
Ge. Abl. d'elle,		d'elles,
Dati. luy, à elle,		leur, à elles,
Accus. la: elle,		les: elles,
Voc. ô elle.		ô elles.

These nominatives, *Ie, tu, il, nous, vous, ils*, are afore verbs personalls, to distinguish their sons, as *Ie croy en Dieu*, I beleeve in God, *tu lis angile*, thou readest the Gospell, &c. And we not say, *Moy, croy, toy lis*: but we may say, *Toy*, , thou, thou readest; *May, Ie croy*, I, I be-e.

ote, that *Il* is sometimes neuter, being refer-to no person, but set afore verbes imperso-, and is englished, It, or there: *Il est temps*, it ne. *Il n'y a personne*, there is no body.

On, set afore all third persons singular of es, makes them (as it were) impersonalls pas- *On en parle par tout*, It is spoken of every e; Men speake, or They speake of it every e.

Leur ſet before a Verb, is the Dative plurall bove expreſſed, and engliſhed Them, or to the but before any other, is the Poſſeſſive Their, theirs.

When we ſpeak with reverence or reſpect, uſe *vous*, and not *tu*, as *Vous me faites pladir*, doe me pleaſure. Yet (as in Engliſh) to God uſe the ſecond perſon ſingular *tu* and *toy*; alſo our familiar friends; or when wee ſpeak to inferiours, or in diſdain and anger.

The reciprocall *ſoi*, *de ſoy* of himſelfe, of ſelf, or of it ſelf, is thus declined:

		Conjunct.	Abſol.
Singular.	Gen. and Ablat.		*de ſoy.*
&	Dative,	*Se*;	*ſoy*, *à ſoy.*
Plurall.	Accuſat	*ſe*,	*ſoy.*

Demonſtratives, thus:

Ce and *ceſt*, or *cet*, This; Maſculine.

		Conjunct.		Conjunc
Sing.	Nom. Accuſ.	*Ce*, *cet*, or *ceſt.*	Plur.	*Ces*
	Gen. Abl.	*de ce*, *de cet*, or *ceſt.*		*de*
	Dative,	*à ce*, *à cet*, *à ceſt.*		*à*

Feminine.

		Conjunc.		Conjunc.	Ab
S	N. Ac.	*Ceſte*, *cette.*	P	*Ces*, *ceſtes*, or *cettes*	
	G. Ab.	*de ceſte*, *de cette*		*de ces*, *de ceſtes*, *de c*	
	Dat.	*à ceſte*, or *à cette*		*à ces*, *à ceſtes*, *à c*	

All the demonſtrative Pronounes are decl like this example, by application of the indef Articles *à* and *de* onely.

N

Note, that *ce* is set afore words beginning with a consonant, as *ce livre*, this book; and *cet* or *cest* afore words beginning with a vowell, or *h* mute, *cet arbre*, this tree; *cet homme*, this man.

Also *ce*, when it is put alone without a substantive, or hath *qui* or *que* after it, is neutrall, signifying That, or It: *Ce sevoit une belle trousse*, That would bee a faire cozening trick. *C'est bien dit*, it is well said. *Ce que je di est vray*, that which I say is true. *Ce qui vous est mal-seant*, which thing is unseemely for you. *Ce ne croy-je pas*, that I beleeve not. *Estant de ce fort joyeux*, being very joyfull of that. To these demonstratives, for more expresse demonstration, are added the adverbiall particles *cy* heer and *là* there, the substantive demonstrated set between thus: *Ce livre-cy*, this book. *Cette plume-là*, that pen. *Cet honneste homme-cy*, this honest man heere. *Cette belle fille-là*, that faire mayden there. All other demonstrative Pronounes are declined like the former example, by the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*. *Cetuy*, *celuy*, *celle*, *cette*, *ceux*, take also *cy* and *là* to them, as *Cetuy-cy*, this same; *cetuy-là*, that same: *cette-cy*, *cette-là*; *celuy-cy*, *celuy-là*; *celle-cy*, *celle-là*; *cettes-cy*, *cettes-là*; *ceux-cy*, *ceux-là*; *celles-cy*, *celles-là*; these same, those same, or them same.

Relatives and Interrogatives.

Qui, *quoy*, *quel*, *quelle*, *icelluy*, *icelle*, are declined with the indefinite Articles *de* and *à*; as *Quel*, *de*

quel, à quel; quels, de quels, à quels, what or wh
So *quoy, de quoy, à quoy*, neuter, what or wh
thing. Common gen.

Sing. { Nom. *Qui.* / G. Abl. *de qui.* / Dative *à qui.* / Accu. *que, qui* } Note, that *que* is the A cuſ. caſe of *qui* wch, the lative; but *qui* is the Acc of *qui* who, the Interr

Lequel, the which, or who: maſculine.

Singul. { N. Ac. *lequel.* / G. Ab. *duquel.* / Dat. *auquel.* } Plur. { *leſquels.* / *deſquels.* / *auſquels* or *eſquels*

So *laquelle, de laquelle, à laquelle: leſquelles, deſquelles, auſquelles*, or *eſquelles*.

Mon, my, mine. Poſſeſſives.

	Conjunct.	Maſc.	Fem.	Com.
Singul.	Nom. Acc.	*Mon,*	*ma.*	*Mes.*
	Gen. Abl.	*de mon,*	*de ma.*	*de mes.*
	Dative,	*à mon,*	*à ma.*	*à me.*
Plur.				

Abſolute.	Conjunc.	Abſol.	Conjunc.
Mien, le mien; un mien.		*Miens, les miens; des mien*	
de mien, du mien; d'un mien		*de miens, des miens.*	
au mien; à un mien.		*à miens, aux miens,*	
		or *es miens, à des miens.*	

Nom. { *Miéne, la miéne*, Abſol.
Accu. { *un miéne*, Conjun.
Gen. { *de miéne, de la miéne*, Abſol.
Abla. { *d'une miéne*, Conjunct.
Dat. { *à miéne, à la miéne; à une miéne.*
Plur. *Miénes, les miénes, des miénes; de miénes, des miénes;*

iénes; *à miénes*, *aux miénes*, and *es miénes*; *à des miénes*, mine. So *Ton*, *ta*, *tien*, thy, thine; and *son*, *sien*, his or her, hers.

Note, that *Mon*, *ton*, *son*, being Masculines, are set afore Nounes Feminines, beginning with a vowell or *h* mute; as *Mon ame*, my soule. *Son honneste recompense*, his honest reward: and being joyned with these two words, *amie*, *amour*, doe sometime suffer syncope; *m' amie*, *m' amour*, as before in the Apostrophus note is observed.

Nostre, our. Conjunctive, absolute.

Nomin.	Masc.	*Nostre*, *un nostre*,	*nostre*, *le nostre*.
Accus.	Fem.	*Nostre*, *une nostre*,	*nostre*, *la nostre*.
Genit.	Masc.	*de nostre*, *d' un nostre*,	*du nostre*.
Ablat.	Fem.	*de nostre*, *d' une nostre*,	*de la nostre*.
Dativ.	Masc.	*à nostre*, *à un nostre*,	*au nostre*.
	Fem.	*à nostre*, *à une nostre*,	*à la nostre*.

Conjunctive, absolute.

Plural. Common Gender.	*Nos*, *des nostres*,	*les nostres*.
	de nos,	*des nostres*.
	à nos;	*à des nostres*, *aux nostres*.

Thus also *vostre*, your, yours; and *leur*, their, theirs.

Common.

	Conjunctive,	absolute.
Masc.	*Leur*, *un leur*,	*le leur*.
Fem.	*leur*, *une leur*,	*la leur*.

Con-

		Conjunctive,	absolute.
Plur.		*leurs, des leurs,* &c.	*les leurs,*

Indefinites.

Quelque, quelques, ſome, of the Common G
der: *quelcun* or *quelqu'un, quelcune, quelques-*
quelques-unes, ſome, ſome one: *Aucun, aucune,*
cuns, aucunes, any, any one, ſome: *Chaque* co
mon, and *chacun, chacune, chacuns, chacunes*, ea
every: *Quiconque* whoſoever, *quelconque* wha
ever; *Nul, nulle, nuls, nulles*, none; *Autre* oth
another; *Autruy*, anothers; *Celuy*, he; *Ceux*, th
are all declinable by means of the indefinite A
cles *de* and *à* onely.

Meſme, ſame.

		Conjunct.	absolute.
Sing.	Nom. Accuſ.	*Meſme,*	*le meſme.*
	Genit. Ablat.	*de meſme,*	*du meſme.*
	Dative,	*à meſme,*	*au meſme.*
Plur.	*Meſmes,*	*les meſmes.*	Thus the
	de meſmes,	*des meſmes.*	minine *M*
	à meſmes,	*aux meſmes.*	*me, la meſme*

Meſme is compounded with Pronouns, as t
ſyllable *met* in Latine; but not with *je, tu, il,*
me, te, ſe, but many others; as *moy-meſme* my ſe
luy-meſme himſelf, &c.

CHA

CHAP. V.

Of a Verbe.

VErbs are of three sorts; Actives, Passives and Neuters. The Actives form their Preterperfect Tense by *I'ay*; as *I'ay aimé*: the Passive by *Ie suis*; as *Ie suis aimé*: the Neuters are of two sorts, Absolute and Reciprocall. Absolute, which form the Preterperfect Tense by *Ie suis*; as *Ie suis allé*: Reciprocall, which put *me, te, se, nous, vous* afore them; as *Ie me fasche*, I am angry: *il se mocque*, he mocketh. Of all which heerafter.

There are two auxiliare verbs (as you see) by whose help all verbs are conjugated; namely, *I'ay* and *Ie suis*: wherefore first of all, their conjugation must diligently bee learned by heart, thus:

Indicative Mood, Present Tense.

Sing.	*I'ay*, I have.	Pl.	*Nous avons*, we have
	Tu as, thou hast.		*Vous avez*, yee have.
	Il a, he hath.		*Ils ont*, they have.
Sing.	*Ie suis*, I am.	Pl.	*Nous sommes*, we are
	Tu es, thou art.		*Vous estes*, ye are.
	Il est, he is.		*Ils sont*, they are.

The Preterimperfect Tense.

S	*I'avoy*, I had.	P.	*Nous avions*, we had
	Tu avois, thou hadst		*Vous aviez*, ye had?
	Il avoit, he had.		*Ils avoyent*, they had.

I'estoy,

S. { *I'estoy*, I was. / *Tu estois*, thou wast. / *Il estoit*, he was. }
P. { *Nous estions*, we we / *Vous estiez*, ye were / *Ils estoyent*, they we }

The first Preterperfect, of time definite.

S. { *I'eu*, I had. / *Tu eus*, thou hadst / *Il eut*, he had. }
P. { *Nous eusmes*, we had. / *Vous eustes*, ye had. / *Ils eurent*, they had. }

S. { *Ie fu*, I was. / *Tu fus*, thou wast. / *Il fut*, he was. }
P. { *Nous fusmes*, we were / *Vous fustes*, ye were. / *Ils furent*, they were. }

The second Preterperfect Tense, compound and indefinite.

Singul. { *I'ay eu*, I have had. / *Tu as eu*, thou hast had. / *Il a eu*, he hath had. }
Plural. { *Nous avons eu*, we have had. / *Vous avez eu* ye have had. / *Ils ont eu*, they have had. }

Singul. { *I'ay esté*, I have been. / *Tu as esté*, thou hast been. / *Il a esté*, he hath been. }
Plural. { *Nous avons esté*, we have been. / *Vous avez esté*, ye have been. / *Ils ont esté*, they have been. }

The Preterpluperfect Tense.

Singul. { *I'avoy eu*, I had had. / *Tu avois eu*, thou hadst had. / *Il avoit eu*, he had had. }

Nous

Nous avions eu, we had had.
Plural. *Vous aviez eu*, ye had had.
Ils avoyent eu, they had had.
I' avoy esté, I had been.
Singul. *Tu avois esté*, thou hadst been.
Il avoit esté, he had been.
Nous avions esté, we had been.
Plural. *Vous aviez esté*, ye had been.
Ils avoyent esté, they had been.

Future Tense.

I' auray, I shall have.
Singul. *Tu auras*, thou shalt have.
Il aura, he shall have.
Nous aurons, we shall have.
Plural. *Vous aurez*, ye shall have.
Ils auront, they shall have.
Ie seray, I shall be.
Singul. *Tu seras*, thou shalt be.
Il sera, he shall be.
Nous serons, we shall be.
Plural. *Vous serez*, we shall be.
Ils seront, they shall be.

Some have two other Tenses of *Ie suis*: viz. Preterperfect redoubled, or Pluperfect definite. *I' eu esté* I had been, *tu eus esté, il eut esté, Nous fmes esté, vous eustes este, ils eurent esté.*

2 Preterperfect indefinite redoubled, or Pluperfect indefinite. *I' ay eu esté, tu as eu esté, il a eu esté, nous avons eu esté, vous avez eu esté, ils ont eu esté.*

The

The Imperative Mood.

S { *Aye*, have thou. / *qu' il ait*, or *aye*, let him have. } P { *Ayons*, let us have. / *Ayez*, have ye. / *qu' ils ayent*, let them ha

S { *Sois*, be thou. / *qu' il ſoit*, let him be. } P { *Soyons*, let us be. / *Soyez*, be ye. / *qu' ils ſoyent*, let them b

Optative Mood, Preſent and Future Tenſe. *la miéne volonté que*, or *Dieu veuille que*, God gra but to the future is added *cy-apres*, heerafter.

S. { *I'aye*, I have, or may have / *Tu ayes*, thou have. / *Il ait*, *aye*, he have. } P. { *Nous ayons.* / *Vous ayez.* / *Ils ayent.* }

S. { *Ie ſoy*, I be, or may be. / *Tu ſois*, thou be. / *Il ſoit*, he be. } P. { *Nous ſoyons.* / *Vous ſoyez.* / *Ils ſoyent.* }

1. Preterimperfect. *Pleuſt à Dieu que*, would God.

I' euſſe, I had, or might have. / *Tu euſſes*, thou hadſt. / *Il euſt*, he had. } P. { *Nous euſſions* / *Vous euſſiez.* / *Ils euſſent.* }

Ie fuſſe, I were, or might be. / *Tu fuſſes*, thou wert. / *Il fuſt*, or *fuſſe*, hee were. } P. { *Nous fuſſions.* / *Vous fuſſiez.* / *Ils fuſſent.* }

Second imperfect Tenſe. *Volontiers*, willingly.

I' auroy, I would have. / *Tu aurois*, thou wouldſt have. / *Il auroit*, he would have. } P. { *Nous aurions* / *Vous auriez.* / *Ils auroyent.* }

Ie seroy, I should be. *Nous serions.*
Tu serois, thou shouldst be. P. *Vous seriez.*
Il seroit, he should bee. *Ils seroyent.*

Preterperfect Tense, *à la miéne volonte que*, or *Dieu veuille que*, I pray God.

I' aye eu, I have had. *Nous ayons eu.*
Tu ayes eu, thou hast had P. *Vous ayez eu.*
Il ait, aye eu, he hath had. *Ils ayent eu.*

I' aye esté, I have been. *Nous ayons esté*
Tu ayes esté, thou hast been P. *Vous ayez esté.*
Il ait, aye esté, he hath been. *Ils ayent esté.*

The first Pluperfect Tense. *Plenst à Dieu que*, would God.

I' eusse eu, I had had. *Nous eussions.*
Tu eusses eu, thou hadst had P. *Vous eussiez.*
Il eust, eusse eu, he had had. *Ils eussent.*

eusse esté, I had been. *Nous eussions esté*
u eusses esté, thou hadst been P. *Vous eussiez esté.*
eust esté, he had been. *Ils eussent esté.*

The second Pluperfect Tense. *Volontiers*, willingly.

Sing.

auroy eu, I would have had. *Nous aurions eu*
n aurois eu, thou wouldst, &c. P. *Vous auriez eu*
auroit eu, he would have had *Ils auroyent eu*

auroy esté, I would have been *Nous aurions esté.*
aurois esté, thou wouldst, &c *Vous auriez esté.*
auroit esté, he would, &c. *Ils auroyent esté.*

The

The Subjunctive mood is wholly like to the Optative, saving in the future tense, which it hath peculiar.

Subjunctive, Future tense, *Quand*, when.

Sing.	Plur.
I'auray eu, I shall have had.	*Nous aurons eu*
Tu auras eu, thou shalt have had.	*Vous aurez eu.*
Il aura eu, he shall have had.	*Ils auront eu.*

Sing.	Plur.
I'auray esté, I shall have beene.	*Nous aurons esté*
tu auras este, thou shalt have bin	*Vous aurez esté.*
Il aura esté, he shall have been.	*Ils auront esté.*

The subjunctive formes are these, *Tantque*, *jusques à tantque*, *jusques à ce que*, appliable to all tenses: *Bienque*, *combienque*, *oreque*, *encoreque*, *ja-soque*, *soitque*, *pourveuque*, *mais que*, *comme ainsi soque*, *ainsque*, *ainsoisque*, *avantque*, *premierque*, to the present and first imperfect, perfect, and first pluperfect, and (not amisse) to the second pluperfect. *Comme ainsi fustque*, to the first imperfect, and pluperfect: *Lorsque*, *si*, *si tostque*, *si estce que*, goe well with the second imperfect, second pluperfect, and future, &c.

Infinitive mood, present, and preterimperfect tense, *Avoir*, to have. *Estre*, to be.

Preterperfect, and pluperfect tense, *Avoir eu*, to have had. *Avoir esté*, to have beene.

Pa

Participles.

Present, and imperfect, active, *Ayant* having: *Estant*, being.

Preterperfect & pluperfect, active, *Ayant eu*, having had, *Ayãt esté*, having bin

Preterite, passive, or common, *Eu, euë*, had. *Esté*, bin.

Participle of the future tense in Latine, *habitu-rus, futurus. I'espere que j'auray, que tu auras*, &c. *Que je doy avoir, que je suis pour avoir, que je vay a-voir*, that I shall have; ought, am, goe, or am a-bout to have; and *que je veux avoir*, that I will have. So *que je deroy avoir*, &c.

Supines, *Habitum tre, Aller avoir*, to go to have, *Habitu, D'estre eu, Avoir*, to be had.

Gerunds, *Habendi, D'avoir*, of having; *Habendo, En ayant*, in having; *Habendum, Pour avoir*, for to have; *habendum est, Il faut avoir*, one must have, &c. After these formes also, *Estre*; as *Qui sera, qui doit estre, qui est pour estre, qui est à estre, qui est pres d'estre, qui va estre*, &c. So all other verbs.

Here are 2. things obserueable: 1. Such verbs as end in *oy*, (except the names of verbes), having this dipthong, *Ie voy, je doy, je croy*, &c. have three varieties, *oy, oye*, & *ois*, as *I'avoy, I'avoye, j'avois; j'auroy, j'auroye, j'aurois*. All second persons plu-rall, doe end in *ez* long, as *vous avez, vous aurez*; Except definites, or first preterperfect tenses, and these three, *vous estes, vous dites, vous faictes*, whose last syllable is short.

Verbs actives transitives, are so called, b
cause the effect of the verb passeth from one su
ject being agent, into another, which is patien
so conteyning 2. persons, one of the nominati
case afore, the other of the accusative or d
tive; as *I'aime les lettres*, I love learning; *La ver
me plaist*, vertue pleaseth me.

Againe, verbs are either regular, of which o
generall and infallible rule may be given; or ir
gular, which cannot be brought under one ru
but have each something particular. But custo
hath prevailed, in imitation of the Latine, to d
stribute them into foure conjugations, about t
order of which, the opinions of Authours a
divers, some making the second, that which o
thers make the third, &c. But all agreeing on t
first, it mattereth not greatly for the other.

The first conjugation then hath it infinitive
er, as *Aimer*; the second in *ir*, as *Bastir*; the thi
in *oir*, as *Voir*; and the fourth in *re*, as *Prendre*.

The conjugating of all verbes doth commo
ly depend on these five parts, from which all t
other tenses are deduced and formed: 1. Th
theame or first person singular of the prese
tense Indicative: 2. The first preterperfect ten
definite: 3. The infinitive: 4. The Participle
ctive present: 5. The participle preterite passi
which I call also common.

For the deduction of the other parts fro
these

these, observe well these rules: 1. The theame or first person Indicative is formed of the Infinitive, in the first, second, and third conjugations by putting away *r*, as *Aimer*, *I'aime*, *fournir*, *Ie fourni*; *voir*, *Ie voy*; and in the fourth conjugation by putting away *re*, of the last syllable, as *Prendre*, *ie prend*; *cognoistre*, *Ie cognoi*.

2. The first person plurall of the theame, is formed of the participle active present, by changing *ant* into *ons*, as *Aimãt*, *aimons*, *fournissãt*, *fournissons*, *voyant*, *voyons*. Or contrariwise, the said participle, of the said first person plurall, by changing *ons* into *ant*. yet remembring this, that if there be a diphthong in the theame, it must bee in the third person plurall, though it be not in the participle, nor first and second persons plurall; as *Ie reçoy*, *nous recevons*, *ils reçoivent*.

3. The Imperfect tense Indicative, is formed of the said first person plurall, or of the said participle present, by changing *ons* or *ant* into *oi*, *oye*, or *ois*; as *Aimons* or *aimant*, *I'aimoy*. *Prenons* or *prenant*, *Ie prenoy*, &c.

4. The future tense, by adding *ay* to the Infinitive, after the last *r*, as *Aimer*, *I'aimeray*, *Prendre*, *Ie prendray*.

5. The second person singular of the Imperative, is ever the Theame it selfe, rejecting the personall pronoune *Ie*; the third is formed of the third person plurall of the Theame, putting away

ns, and the plurall number is the ſame with th Indicative preſent, rejecting *Nous* and *vous*; *Aime, qu'il aime, Aimons, aimez, qu'ils aiment. Reçoy qu'il reçoive, Reçevons, reçevez, qu'ils reçoivent.* Ex cept from this rule, the verbs *Faire* & *Sçavoir*.

6. The preſent and future tenſes optative and ſubjunctive, are the ſame as the third ſingul of the Imperative, as *Que j'aime, beniſſe, reçoiv préne*: and in the firſt and ſecond perſons plurall it taketh *i* afore the laſt ſyllable, as *Aimions, aimiez, Beniſſions, beniſſiez, Prenions, preniez*, &c.

7. The firſt imperfect of the Optative and Subiunctive, is formed of the ſecond perſon ſin gular of the firſt preterperfect indicative, (called definite) by putting to *ſe*, as *Aimas, aimaſſe, benis, beniſſe*.

8. The ſecond imperfect of the Opt. and Sub junctive, is formed of the future Indicative, by changing *a* into *o*, or *ray* into *roy*, as *Aimeray, aimeroy, Beniray, beniroy*. Some irregulars excep ted.

9. All the other tenſes are compounded of the auxiliare verbes, and of the participle prete rite or common, as *I'ay parlé, I'avoy parlé*; *Ieuſſe parlé*, &c. *Ie ſuis parlé*, &c.

Thus from theſe five parts, all the reſt are de duced, as in theſe examples here following, ap peareth.

In-

Indicative mood, preſent tenſe, ſingular,

1. I love, *I'aime, tu aimes, il aime.*
2. I build, *Ie baſti, tu baſtis, il baſtit.*
3. I ſee. *Ie voy, tu vois, il voit.*
4. I read, *Ie li*, or *lis, tu lis, il lit.*

Plur.
Nous aimons, vous aimez, ils aiment:
Nous baſtiſſons, vous baſtiſſez, ils baſtiſſent.
Nous voyons, vous voyez, ils voyent.
Nous liſons, vous liſez, ils liſent.

The preterimperfect tenſe.

I did loue, *I'aimoy, tu aimois, il aimoit.*
I did build, *Ie baſtiſſoy, tu baſtiſſois, il baſtiſſoit.*
I did ſee, *Ie voyoy, tu voyois, il voyoit.*
I did read, *Ie liſoy, tu liſois, il liſoit.*

Plur.
Nous aimions, vous aimiez, ils aimoyent.
baſtiſſions, baſtiſſiez, baſtiſſoyent.
voyions, voyiez, voyoyent.
liſions, liſiez, liſoyent.

The firſt preterperfect, of time definite.

Sing.
I loved, *I'aimay, tu aimas, il aima.*
I builded, *Ie baſti, tu baſtis, il baſtiſt.*
I ſaw, *Ie vei*, or *vi, tu veis* or *vis, il veiſt.*
I did read, *Ie leu, tu leus, il leut.*

Plur.
Nous aimaſmes, vous aimaſtes, ils aimerent.
baſtiſmes, baſtiſtes, baſtirent.
veiſmes, or *viſmes, veiſtes, virent.*
leuſmes, leuſtes, leurent.

The second preterperfect tense, compound, and unlimited.

Sing. I have { loved, builded, seene, read } { I'ay, tu as, il, a } { aimé. basti. veu. leu. }

Plur. *Nous avons, vous avez, ils ont* { aimé. basti. veu. leu. }

The preterpluperfect tense.

Sing. I had { loved, builded, seene, read } { I'avoy, tu avois, il avoit. } { aimé. basti. veu. leu. }

Plur. *Nous avions, vous aviez, il avoyent.* { aimé. basti. veu. leu. }

The first redoubled definite: a tense proper to the French.

Sing. *I'eu, tu eu, il eut.*

Plur. { *Nous eusmes, vous eustes, il eurent.* } { aimé. basti. veu. leu. } I had { loved. built. seene. read. }

The second redoubled indefinite, also proper to the French.

Sing. *I'ay eu, tu as eu, il a eu.* { aimé, basti. veu, leu. }

Plur. { *Nous avons eu, vous avez eu, ils ont eu.* } *Aimé, basti, veu, leu.*

The Future tenſe ſingular.

S. { I ſhall or I will. } { love, *I'aimeray, tu aimeras, il aimera.* / build, *bastiray, bastiras, bastira.* / ſee, *voiray*, or *verray, verras, verra.* / read, *liray, liras, lira.* }

Plur.
Nous aimerons, vous aimerez, ils aimeront.
bastirons, bastiréz, bastiront.
verrons, verrez, verront.
lirons, liréz, liront.

Note that *verray, verras, verra*, &c. is moſt uſed, inſtead of *voiray, voiras*, &c.

Imperative mood.

Sing. { love, build, ſee, read, } thou { *Aime. Baſte. Voy. Lis.* } *qu'il* { *aime. baſtiſſe voye. liſe.* }

Plur.
Aimons, aimez, qu'ils aiment.
Baſtiſſons, baſtiſſez, qu'ils baſtiſſent.
Voyons, voyez, qu'ils voyent.
Liſons, liſez, qu'il liſent.

Optative mood, preſent and future tenſes: *A la miéve volonté que*, or *Dieu vueille que*, God grant. But to the future is added *Cy-apres*, hereafter.

Sing. that
I love, *I'aime, tu aimes, il aime.*
I build, *Ie baſtiſſe, tu baſtiſſes, il baſtiſſe.*
I ſee, *Ie voye, tu voyes, il voye.*
I read, *Ie liſe, tu liſes, il liſe.*

Plur.
Nous aimions, vous aimiez, ils aiment.
baſtiſſions, baſtiſſiez, baſtiſſent.
voyions voyez, voyent.
liſions, liſiez, liſent.

The firſt Imperfect. *Pleuſt à Dieu que,* Would God.

Sing.
I loved, *I'aimaſſe, tu aimaſſes, il amaſt.*
I builded, *Ie baſtiſſe, baſtiſſes, baſtiſt.*
I ſaw, *Ie veiſſe, veiſſes, veiſt.*
I read *Ie leuſſes, leuſſes, leuſt.*

Plur.
Nous aimaſſions, vous aimaſſiez, ils aimaſſent
baſtiſsions, baſtiſsiez, baſtiſſent.
veiſſions, veiſſiez, veiſſent.
leuſſions, leuſſiez, leuſſent.

The ſecond imperfect. *Volontiers,* willingly.

Sing. I would.
love, *I'aimeroy, tu aimerois, il aimeroit.*
build, *Ie baſtiroy, tu baſtirois, il baſtiroit.*
ſee, *Ie verroy, tu verrois, il verroit.*
read, *Ie liroy, tu lirois, il liroit.*

Plur.
Nous aimerions, vous aimeriez, ils aimeroyent
baſtirions, baſtiriez, baſtiroyent.
verrions, verriez, verroyent.
lirions, liriez, liroyent.

The

The preterperfect tense, *à la miéne volonté que*, or *Ie prie Dieu que*, I pray God

Sing. I have { loved, builded, seene, read, } *I'aye, tu ayes, il aye, or il ait.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous ayons, vous ayez, ils ayent.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

The first Pluperfect tense. *Pleust à Dieu que*, would God

Sing. I had { loved, builded, seene, read. } *I'eusse, tu eusses, il eust, or eusse.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous eussions, vous eustiez, ils eussent.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

The second Pluperfect tense, *à la miéne volonté que*, with a good will

Sing. I would have { loved, builded, seene, read, } *I'auroy, tu auros, il auroit* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous aurions, vous auriez, ils auroyent.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

The Subjunctive mood is in all points like the Optative, saving that you must apply to it the subjunctive formes afore specified, and in the future tense, which it hath peculiar: thus:

Subjunctive future tense, *Quand*, when.

I shall have { loved, builded, seene, read. } *I'auray, tu auras, il aura.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Plur. *Nous aurons, vous aurez, ils auront.* { *aimé. basti. veu. leu.*

Infinitive mood.

Present and imperfect tense. { *Aimer*, to love. *Bastir*, to build. *Voir*, to see. *Lire*, to reade.

Preterperfect, and preterpluperfect tenses. { *Avoir aimé*, to have or had loved. *Avoir basti*, to have or had built. *Avoir veu*, to have or had seene. *Avoir leu*, to have or had read.

Participles. Present & imperfect, active, *aimant*, loving. *bastissant*, building, *voyãt*, seeing, *lisant*, reading.

Preterperf. & preterpluper. passive, *ayant aimé*, having loved, *ayant basti, ayant veu, ayant leu.*

Preterite passive, or common, *aimé, aimeé*, loved, *basti, bastie, veu, veuë, leu, leuë.*

Amaturus, qui aimera, which shall love; *qui doit aimer*

mer, qui est pour aimer, qui va aimer, which is rea-
y or about to love; *pres d'aimer*, neere loving;
oulant or *allant aimer*, about to love. Supines,
er, à aimer. Gerunds, *d'aimer*, of loving; *en ai-*
ant, in loving; *pour aimer*, for to love; *il faut aim-*
er, one must love: *amandus*, to be loved; *aimer,*
qui doit estre aimé, or *aimée*.

Verbes reciprocall, or reflexed, are all such as make not their transitive action from one subject into another, but the agent reciprocates its action into it selfe, becomming both agent and patient; for it hath both the nominative, and also the dative or accusative, of one same person; whence they often inferre a passive sense, as *Ie me delecte à l'estude*, I delight my selfe, or I am delighted with study, *Tu te plais à jouer*, thou pleasest thy selfe in play, *Ton pere s'en fasche*, thy father is angry at it, &c. They are thus conjugated:

Indicative mood, present tense.

Ie m'aime, I love my selfe, *tu t'aimes, il s'aime, nous nous aimons, vous vous aimez, ils s'aiment.*

Ie me fasche, I am angry, *tu te fasches, il se fasche, nous nous faschons, vous vous faschez, ils se fachent.*

Ie me mocque, I mocke, *tu te mocques, il se mocque, nous nous mocquons, vous vous mocquez, ils se mocquẽt.*

Imperfect tense.

Ie m'aimoy, I did love my selfe, *tu t'aimois, il s'aimoit, nous nous aimions, vous vous aimiez, ils s'aimoyent*,

Ie

Ie me faſchoy, I was angry, *tu te faſchois*, *il ſe choit*, *Nous nous faſchions*, *vous vous faſchiez*, *ils ſe choyent*.

Ie me mocquoy, I did mocke, *tu te mocquois*, *il ſe mocquoit*, *Nous nous mocquions*, *vous vous mocquiez*, *ils ſe mocquoyent*.

2. Preterperfect definite.

Ie m'aimay, I loved my ſelfe, *ie me faſchay*, I was angry, *je me mocquay*, I mocked, *tu t'aimas*, &c.

2. Preterperfect, indefinite.

Ie me ſuis aimé, I have loved my ſelfe,
Ie me ſuis faſché, I have beene angry,
Ie me ſuis mocqué, I have mocked.
} *tu t'es*, *il ſ'*

Nous nous ſómes, *vous vous eſtez*, *ils ſe ſont*.
} *aimé*, *aimez*, *faſché*, *faſchez*, *mocqué*, *mocquez*.

Preterpluperfect tenſe.

Ie m'eſtois aimé, I had loved my ſelf,
Ie m'eſtois faſché, I had beene angry,
Ie m'eſtois mocqué, I had mocked.
} *tu t'eſtois*, *il ſ'eſtoit*, *aimé*, &c.

Nous nous eſtions, *vous vous eſtiez*, *ils ſ'eſtoyent*.
} *aimé*, *aimez*, *faſché*, *faſchez*, *mocqué*, *mocquez*.

The

The redoubled definite, much used.

Ie me fu aimé, I had loved my selfe, *tu te fus aimé*, *se fut aimé*, *nous nous fusmes aimez*, *vous vous fustes imez*, *ils se furent aimez*: so *Ie me fu fascbé*, I had ene angry.

Future tense.

Ie m'aimeray, I will love my selfe, *tu t'aimeras*, ou wilt love thy selfe, &c. and *Ie me fascheray*, will bee angry; and *je mocqueray*, I will mocke, c.

Imperative, *Aime-toy*, *qu'il s'aime*, *aimons-nous*, *imez-vous*, *qu'il s'aiment*.

Optative present, and future, *à la miéne volonté ue je m'aime*, *que tu t'aimes*, &c.

1. Imperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que je m'aimasse*, *que t'aimasses*, *qu'il s'aimast*, or *aimasse*, &c.

2. Imperfect, *Volontiers je m'aimerois*, *tu t'aimeois*, &c.

Preterperfect tense, *à la miéne volonté*, *que je me is aimé*, *tu te sois aimé*, *il se soit aimé*, *nous nous soyons imez*, *vous vous soyez aiméz*, *ils se soyent aimez*.

1. Preteipluperfect, *Pleust à Dieu que*, *Ie me fusse imé*, *tu te fusses aimé*, &c.

2. Pluperfect, *volontiers Ie me serois aimé*, *tu te seis aimé*, &c.

Subjunctive, future, *Quand je me seray aimé*, *tu te ras aimé*, &c.

Infinitive pres. and imperf. *M'aimer*, *t'aimer*, *aimer*, *nous aimer*, *vous aimer*, *s'aimer*.

Per-

Perfect and Pluperfect, *M' estre aimé, t' estre aimé, s' estre aimé*, &c.

Participle present and imperf. *M' aimant, t' aimant, s' aimant*, &c.

Preterperfect and Pluperfect, *M' estant aimé, t' estant aimé*, &c.

Here two things are to be noted; First, that the compound Tenses, the auxiliar *Ie suis* is used in stead of *I' ay*. Secondly, that the Participle common follows ever the Gender and Number of the substantive that is the patient; as, *Cette femme s' est fardee*, this woman is painted, or hath painted herselfe; *& ses amoureux s' y sont abusez*, and her lovers have been deceived by it, or have deceived themselves by it.

All Verbs active may thus bee reciprocated. But there are some Verbs which move alone according to this forme; as, *Ie me souvien*, I remember: *Ie me repen*, I repent: *Ie m' abstien*, I abstain: *Ie me comporte*, I behave my selfe: *Ie m' esbahi*, I wonder: *Ie m' esmerveille*, I marvell: *Ie me mocque*, &c. Which three last may also be used in the sense and conjugation passive; as, *Ie suis esbahi*, I am abashed or astonied: *Ie suis esmerveillé*, I wonder: *Ie suis mocqué*, I am mocked.

Verbs neuters are such as conteine in themselves an effect which is not produced in any other subject. Some of these do, first, appropriate to themselves the active forme; as, *Ie dors*, I sleep;

who

whose Preterperfect is *I'ay dormi, Ie vi*, I live, *I'ay vescu*: so *Ie suë, Ie tremble, Ie frissonne, Ie gele*, and some others, which we referre to the disposition active. Secondly, others there are which have a double use and sense: which imployed actively have the active conjugation, but in the neuter sense have the neuter; as, *Ie crois*, I growe: wch, signifying actively I give growth to some thing, hath its Preterperfect *I'ay cru*; but signifying, I growe in my selfe, hath its Preterperfect *Ie suis cru*. So *I'adouci* hath *I'ay adouci* and *Ie suis adouci*: and of these we will give a long list anon. Thirdly, there are others which have onely the disposition neuter, and none other; as, *Naistre, mourir, aller, choir, tomber, venir, retourner, issir*, &c. which have their effect in a locall moving; yet some of these may have also an active transitive sense, and active conjugation: *Nous avons toute la matinee couru le lievre*, we have all the morning ronne (or hunted) the Hare: heer *courir* is active. *Si tost que nous avons ouï l'alarme, nous y sommes courus*; so soone as wee heard the alarum, wee ranne thither: heere *courir* is neuter. And of this sort are these; *Arriver, aborder, descendre, entrer, evader, eschaper, escamper, fuir, monter, passer, sortir, partir* to depart, and perhaps some others: which when they have an accusative case after them, are actives; if without any after them, are neuters, because their effect finisheth in themselves. For conjugating

jugating of theſe, ſee the Verb *Aller*, heereaf
Now of the ſecond ſort are Verbs, which acc
ding to the diverſe conjugating and ſyntax
plied to them, may bee Actives tranſitives, Re
procals and Neuters; namely, *Aborder, abaiſ
aboutir, abreger, accourcir, adoucir, affoiblir, aferm
afadir, agrandir, agreſlir, aigrir, alentir, alonger, aleg
ajeunir, amaigrir, amender, amenuiſer, amollir, amo
drir, anéantir, anonchalir, anoitir, apetiſſer, apauvrir,
peſantir, aprivoiſer, ardre* or *ardoir, arondir, aſprir, a
dir, atendrir, aſſagir, augmenter, avachir, aſſecher. Ba
ſer, bãder, blãchir, bouger, branler, bruſler, bruner, blõ
Chãger, charger, croiſtre, chãzir, crouler. Diminuer,
geler, déloger, décliner, dévoler, durcir. embellir, enlai
encherir, encliner, endurcir, enorgueillir, enforcer, engr
dir, engroſsir, enhardir, engraiſſer, emmaigrir, enrich
envenimer, empirer, envieiller, eſclairer, eſclaircir, eſpe
ſir, eſlargir, eſtrecir, eſloigner, eſvanoüir. Fener, fanir
faner, fleſtrir, fléchir, finir. greſlir* or *graiſler, groſſir, gr
ler, grouler, guerir, hauſſer, jaunir, laſcher, loger, Meur
moitir, moiſir, mollir, multiplier, monter, monvoir, mu
ver, muër, Noircir, nicher, Piler, plomber, pourrir, pr
ter, pancher, Rabaiſſer, ravaler, rancir, reboucher, re
ër, rencherir, renforcer, réſtrecir, reverdir, rajeunir,
dir, roſtir, rougir, rouſſir, reculer, Saigner, ſonner,
cher, Trainer, tremper, tarir, Verdir, vieillir, venter.
ample: *Le ſoleil mollit la cire, et durcit la fange*;
Sunne ſoftneth wax, and hardneth dirt. *La
mollit*, or *ſ' amollit au ſoleil; et la fange y durcit,*

ſ'

endurcit: wax ſoftneth, or is ſoftned at the unne; and dirt thereby hardneth, or is thereby rdned. *La roſee blanchit la toille*: the dew white-eth cloth. *La toille blanchit*, or *ſe blanchit par la roſee*: cloth whiteneth, or is whitened by the ew, &c.

Verbs Paſſives are conjugated throughout, by eanes of the auxiliare Verb *Ie ſuis*, and the Par-iciple paſſive: as Indicative preſent Tenſe, *Ie ſuis aimé*, I am loved; *Tu es aimé*, thou art loved; *Il ſt aimé*, he is loved, &c. Imperfect; *I'eſtoy aimé*, was loved, and ſo forwards: *Ie fu aimé*, *I'ay eſté aimé*, *I'avoy eſté aimé*, *Ie ſeray aimé*, &c. and in all other Moods & Tenſes uſing the auxiliar *Ie ſuis*, nd the aforeſaid Participle: which Participle va-rieth in Gender & Number; as, *Ie ſuis aimé*, maſ-culine; *aimée*, feminine: Plurall, *Nous ſommes ai-mez*, maſc. *aimées*, fem.

Chap. VI.

Of Verbes Anomala *or* Irregular.

THus have we run over the kindes of verbes, and ſhewed the conjugating of the regulars. now we come to the heteroclites and irregulars. But firſt note, that the verbs of the firſt conjuga-tion, which are almoſt infinite in number, are all regular, ſaving that in ſome phraſes we ſay *gard'* in ſtead of *garde*; as, *Dieu gard' la compagnie*, God

ſave the company, *Dieu vous gard' de mal*, G keepe you from evill; Alſo we ſay, *Doint* for *ne*, as *Dieu vous doint heureuſe & longue vie*, G give you an happy and long life; and in the ture Indicative we ſay, *donray*, for *donneray*; in the ſecond imperfect optative, *donroy*, for *neroy*: So alſo in the verbe *Laiſſer*, we ſay *Lairr lairrois*, in the ſame tenſes, for *Laiſſeray*, *laiſſero* and ſometimes (though ſeldome) *amerray*, *am rois*, for *ameneray*, *amenerois*. Laſtly; except t verbe *Aller*, to goe, a verbe neuter, Heteroclit and irregular: Yet, for it frequent uſe, worth yo learning throughout.

Indicative mood, preſent tenſe. I goe.

Ie vay, vais, or vois, tu vas, il va: Vous allons, vo allez, ils vont.

Imperfect, I did goe, *I'alloy, tu allois, il alloit: no allions, vous alliez, ils alloyent.*

1. Perfect definite, I went, *I'allay, tu allas, il all nous allaſmes, vous allaſtes, ils allérent.*

2. Preterperfect tenſe indefinite,

I have gone.

Ie ſuis allé, tu es allé, il eſt allé; nous ſommes all vous eſtez allez, ils ſont allez.

Preterpluperfect tenſe, I had gone.

I'eſtoy allé, tu eſtois allé, il eſtoit allé; nous eſtions lez, vous eſtiez allez, ils eſtoyent allez.

The redoubled definite, much uſed,

I had gone.

I

Ie fu allé, tu fus allé, il fut allé, nous fusmes allez, vous fustes allez, ils furent allez.

The redoubled indefinite, I had gone.

I'ay esté allé, tu as esté allé, il a esté allé; nous avons esté allez, vous avez esté allez, ils ont esté allez.

Future, I will goe, *I'iray, tu iras, il ira; nous irons, vous irez, ils iront.*

Imperative, goe thou, *va, qu'il aille*, or *voise; Allons, allez, qu'ils aillent*, or *voisent.*

Optative mood, present and future, *Dieu vueille que*, God grant I may goe, *I'aille*, or *voisse, tu ailles* or *voisses, il aille*, or *voise: nous allions*, or *voisions, vous alliez*, or *voisiez, ils aillent*, or *voisent.*

1. Imperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que.* Would God I did go: or, I went.

I'allasse, tu allasses, il allast, or *allasse; nous allassions*, or *allissions, vous allassiez*, or *allissiez, ils allassent.*

2. Imperfect. *Volontiers*, I willingly would goe, *I'iroy, tu irois, il iroit: nous irions, vous iriez, ils iroyent.*

Preterperfect. *Ie prie Dieu que*, I pray God I have gone.

Ie soye allé, tu sois allé, il soit allé, Nous soyons allez, vous soyez allez, ils soyent allez.

1. Preterpluperfect. *Pleust à Dieu que*, Would God I had gone.

Ie fusse allé, tu fusses allé, il fust, or *fusse allé; Nous fussions allez, vous fussiez allez, ils fussent allez.*

2. Pluperfect. *Volontiers*, willingly I had go
or would have gone.

Ie seroy allé, tu serois allé, il seroit allé, Nous ser allez, vous seriez allez, ils seroyent allez.

The Subjunctive is as the Optative, except t future, *Quand*, When I shall goe, or be gone.

Ie seray allé, tu seras allé, il sera allé, Nous serons al vous serez allez, ils seront allez.

Infinitive, *Aller*, to goe, *Estre allé*, to be, or have or had gone.

Participles. *Allant*, going. *Estant allé*, being having gone. *Allé, allez, allee, allees.* gone.

The Heteroclites, and Anomala'es of the ot three conjugations now follow; of which w will onely set downe the five maine parts, a mentioned, from which all the other may bee duced.

Of the second conjugation.

Note first, that all adverbs of the three co gations following, make the third person sin lar of the present Indicative, and of the first p terperfect, in *t* or *d*, as *il guerit*, *il void* or *voit*, *prend*.

2. That the second person, in those same t ses, is usurped often for the first: so that wee m say, *Ie gueri*, or *Ie gueris*, *Ie voy*, or *Ie vois*, *Ie pre Ie prens*. Yet from this rule is excepted these ve *I'ouvre*, *Ie couvre*, *I'offre*, *Ie souffre*, and their co

poun

ounds: alſo *Ie cueille*,

I aſſaile, *I'aſſauls, tu aſſauls, il aſſault, Nous aſſaillons*, c. Definite, *I'aſſailli*. Indefinit, *I'aſſailli*; Infinitive, *ſſaillir*. Participle, *Aſſaillant*. Future, *I'aſſailliray*, *I'aſſaudray*.

So *Treſſaillir*, and *Surſailler*. The ſimple verbe *ailler*, to leape, wants the ſingular of the preſent dicative; and (conſequently) the ſecond perſon ſingular of the Imperative: the reſt is whole.

I bleſſe, *Ie beni*, and the third perſon plurall *beſſent* or *benient*. *Ie beni* or *benis*. *I'ay benit*. *Benir*, and old time, *benire* or *beniſtre*.

I boile, *Ie bouls*, plur. *Nous boüillons*: *Ie boüilli*, *I'ay üilli*, or *boüillu*; *Boüillir*. *Boüillant*. Future, *Ie boilliray*, or *boudray*. Thus *Eſboüillir*, *Reboüillir*.

¶ I make a noiſe, *Ie brui*. *Ie bruï*, *I'ay bruit*. *Bruir*, *bruire*. *Bruyant*.

¶ I runne, *Ie cour*, *Ie çouru*, *I'ay couru*, or *Ie ſuis uru*, or *Ie m'en ſuis couru*. *Courir*, or *courre*, with me. *Courant*. Future, *Ie courray*. So *Accourir*, *Recourir*, *Encourir*; alſo *ſecourir* and *diſcourir*, ſaving at they have not the neuter conjugating.

¶ I cover, *Ie couvre*, *Ie couvri*, *I'ay couvert*, *Couvrir*, *Couvrant*. So it compounds *deſcouvrir*, *recouvrir*; alſo *ouvrir*, *offrir*, and *ſoufrir*.

¶ *Ie cueuls*, *tu cueuls*, *il cueult*, or which is more ed, *Ie cueille*, *tu cueilles*, *il cueille*, *nous cueillons*. *Ie cueilli*, *I'ay cueilli*, *Cueiller*, *Cueillant*. Future, *Ie illiray*, or *cueilleray*; *cueudray*, out of uſe.

¶ I circumcise, *Ie circonci*, or *cis*; *Ie circonci*, or *I'ay circoncis*, *Circoncir*, or *Circoncire*; *Circonſiſſant*, *Circonciant*.

¶ I ſleepe, *Ie dors*, *tu dors*, *il dort*; *nous dormons*, *dormi*, *I'ay dormi*, *Dormir*, *Dormant*.

¶ I ſquare, *I'eſquarre*, *I'eſquarri*, *I'ay eſquarre*, *quarrir*, *eſquarrant*.

¶ I faile, *Ie faus*, *tu faus*, *il faut*, *nous fa lons*: *Ie failli*, *I'ay failli*, *faillir*, *faillant*, *Ie faillira*, *faudray*.

Thus *Defailler*.

¶ I ſtrike, *Ie fiér*, *Ie feri*, or *feru*, *I'ay feru*, *Fe fiérant*.

¶ I flee, *Ie fuï*, *Ie fuï*, *I'ay fuï*, *Ie ſuis fuï*, or *Ie ſuis fuï*, or *fuit*: *fuïr*, or *fuire*; *fuyant*. So *Enfuïr*, a *Refuïr*; alſo *Defuïr*, ſaving that it is onely activ ly not paſſively.

¶ I lye downe, or in child-bed, *Ie gis*, *Ie g I'ay geſi*, *Geſir*, *giſant*: Future, *Geſiray*, or *giray*, or g *ray*, of the old infinitive *Gerre*.

¶ I have, *Ie hay*, *Ie haï*, *I'ay haï*, *Haïr*, *Hayant*, *haïſſant*: Future, *Hairay*, or *haïray*.

I iſſue forth, *I'iſſi*, or *I'is*. *I'iſſi*, *Ie ſuis iſſu*, *Iſſir*, *Fu Iſſiray*.

I die; *Ie meurs*, *tu meurs*, *il meurt*, *Nous mour Ie mouru*, *Ie ſuis mort*, *Mourir*, *mourant*: Future *mourray*. Reciprocated, *Ie me meurs*, *tu te meurs*, &

¶ I lie, *Ie mens*, *Ie menti*, *I'ay menti*, *Mentir*, *M tant*. So *Dementir*.

¶ I heare, *I'oy, I'ouï, I'ay ouï, Ouir, Oyant* : Future *rray*, or *oiray*. So *entrouir*.

¶ I depart, *Ie parts, Ie parti, I'ay parti*, or *e ſuis parti*; *Partir, Partant*. So *Repartir, Departir, ompartir* and *Mipartir*.

¶ I ſtinke, *Ie pu, tu pus, il put, Nous puons; Ie puï, ay puï, Puïr, Putant*, or *puant*; Fut. *puray*.

¶ I ſeeke, or fetch, *Ie quier, Ie quis, I'ay quis, Querir* or *querre, querant*; Future, *Querray*. So *Acquerir, conquerir, enquerir, requerir*.

¶ I ſeele, *Ie ſen, Ie ſenti, I'ay ſenti, Sentir, entant*. So *conſentir, diſſentir, reſſentir*.

¶ I ſerve, *Ie ſers, Ie ſervi, I'ay ſervi, Servir, ſervant*. So *Reſervir*, and *deſſervir*.

¶ I repent, *Ie me repen, Ie me repenti, Ie me ſuis repenti, Se repentir, Se repentant*.

¶ I go forth, *Ie ſors, Ie ſorti, I'ay ſorti*, or *Ie ſuis rti, Sortir, ſortant*.

¶ I hold, *Ie tien, tu tiens, il tient, Nous tenons, ous tenez, ils tiennent*; *Ie tins*, and the third plurall, *s tendrent*; *I'ay tenu*, or of ſome *tins*: *Tenir, Tenant*, ut. *Ie tiendray*. So *Appartenir, contenir, detenir, entretenir, maintenir, obtenir, retenir, ſouſtenir*.

¶ I take away, *Ie tolli, Ie tolli*, or *tollu, I'ay tolli*, or *llu, Tollir, tolliſſant*.

¶ I come, *Ie vien, Ie vins, Ie ſuis venu, Venir, Venant*. Fut. *Ie viendray*, and the third perſon plurall of the firſt perfect tenſe definite, *Vindrent*, as alſo in *Ie tien*. So *Avenir, devenir, revenir, provenir,*

parvenir, ſurvenir, intervenir, &c. But *prevenir* a *ſubvenir*, have the active and paſſive forme; a *Convenir*, the active or neuter indifferently.

¶ I clothe, or put on, *Ie veſts*, or *veſtis*, *Ie ve* *I'ay veſtu*, *veſtir*, *veſtant*, or *veſtiſſant*. So *D* *veſtir*, *reveſtir*, &c.

Of the third Conjugation.

¶ I appeare, *I'apper*, or *I'apparoy*, *I'apparu*, or *pa* *Apparoir*, or *apparoiſtre*.

¶ I perceive, *I'apperçoy*, *ois*, *oit*, *nous appercevons*, *e* *ils apperçoivent*, *I'apperceu*, *Iay apperceu*, *Apperceva* *Appercevant*. Fut. *Appercevray*. So *Concevoir*, *Dec* *voir*, *Recevoir*, *Devoir*, and *ramentevoir*; whoſe pr ſents indicative are, *Ie conçoy*, *Ie deçoy*, *Ie reçoy*, *I* *doy*, *Ie ramentoy*.

Avoir is already before conjugated.

¶ I fall, *Ie ché*, *tu chés*, *il chét*, *Nous chéons*: *Ie che* *I'ay cheu*, or *Ie ſuis cheu*, *Cheoir*, *cheant*. Fut. *Ie che* *ray*. So *Decheoir*, *Eſcheoir*, and *Recheoir*.

¶ *Chaloer*, and *Faloir*, are meerely imperſonall of which hereafter.

¶ I grieve, *Ie deuls*, *Ie doulu*, *I'ay doulu*, *Doulo* *Deulant*, or *dueillant*, *Dueilleray*.

It is moſt uſed reciprocally, thus: *Ie me deu* *tu te deuls*, *il ſe deult*. *Nous nous dueillons*, or *doulo* *vous vous dueillez*, *ils ſe dueillent*, or *deulent*. *Ie m* *dueilli*, or *doulu*. *Ie me ſuis doulu*. *Se douloir*. *Se duei* *lant*, or *doulant*. *Ie me deurray*. So *Condouloir*.

¶ I move, *Ie meus*, *eus*, *eut*. *Nous mouvons*, *ez* *meuvent*

meuvent, or *mouvent*. *Ie meu. I' ay meu. Mouvoir*, or *meuvoir. Mouvant.* Fut. *Ie meuvray. Mouveray*, or *meuvray.* So *Esmouvoir, demouvoir*, &c.

¶ I raine, *Ie pleu. Ie plu. I' ay plu. Pleuvoir. Pleuvant. Pleuvray.* It is used impersonally: *Il pleut, il plut. Il a plu*, &c.

¶ I can, *Ie puis*, or *Ie peux, tu peux, il peut: nous pouvons, ez, peuvent. Ie peu. I' ay peu. Pouvoir, pouvant.* Fut. *Ie pourray.* Present Opt. *Ie puisse.*

¶ I knowe, *Ie sçay, tu sçais, il sçait. Nous sçavons, vez, vent. Ie sceu. I' ay sceu. Sçavoir. Sçachant.* Imperative, *Sçache, qu' il sçache, sçachons*, &c.

¶ I sit, *Ie sieds*, or *sié'd, tu sieds, il sied. Nous séons, ez, ils séent. Ie sis. I' ay sis. Seoir*, or *soir. Séant*, or *siésant.* Fut. *Ie sieray*, or *serray*, or *siéseray.* Thus *Sursoir, Assoir*, and *Rassoir.* These verbs, and *Assoir, rassoir*, are often used as Reciprocals. Also this is much used impersonally. *Il sied, il seoit*, or *sieseoit.* The Preterperfect are not used, but supplied by the Participle. *Il fut seant, il a esté seant. Il siera.* Infinitive, *Estre seant.* Thus it signifieth to sit well, or become.

¶ *Souloir* is a verb defective: in the plurall of the present indicative, it hath *Nous soulons.* Imperfect, *Ie soulois, ois, oit: nous soulions, iez, il souloyent.* Infinitive, *souloir*, to be wont. All the rest is wanting, and supplied by the Verb *Accoustumer*; as, *Ie suis accoustumé*, &c.

¶ I am worth, or of value, *Ie vau*, or *vaux, tu*

vaux,

vaux, il vaut: nous vallons, ez, ils vaillent, or *vale*
Ie valu. I' ay valu. Valoir. Valant. Ie vaudray. Im-
perative, *vaux, qu' il vale* or *vaille, valons, valez*
qu' ils valent or *vaillent.*

¶ I will, *Ie vueil*, or more in uſe, *Ie veux, tu veux*
il veut: nous voulons, ez, ils veulent, Ie voulu, I' ay
voulu, vouloir, voulant, Ie voudray. Imperative (of
little uſe) *veux, qu' il veule* or *vueille: voulons, ez,*
qu' ils veulent, or *vueillent.* Preſent Optative, *Ie veuſſe*
or *vueille*, or *veuille.* The firſt imperfect Optative,
Ie vouluſſe, or *vouſiſſe.*

Of the fourth Conjugation.

¶ I burne, *I' ards, I' ardi, I' ay ars. Ardre*, or *ardoir.*
Ardant. I' ardray. So *Eſpardre.*

¶ I wait, *I' atten. I' attende. I' ay attendu. Atten-*
dre. Attendant. I' attendray. So alſo *Tendre, deſten-*
dre, eſtendre, entendre, pretendre; alſo *Fendre, defen-*
dre, pourfendre; and *Pendre, deſpendre, reſpandre, re-*
pendre, ſuſpendre, eſpandre, vendre, deſcendre, condeſ-
cendre, rendre. But *deſcendre* hath it Preterperfect
I' ay, or *Ie ſuis deſcendu.*

¶ I beat, *Ie bas, tu bas, il bat: nous batons. Ie bati,*
I' ay batu. Battre, battant. Ie battray ſo it compoũds.

¶ I drinke, *Ie boy, ois, oit, Nous beuvons, ez, ils boi-*
vent, or *beuvent, Ie beu, I' ay beu, Boire, Beuvant. Ie boi-*
ray, or *beuray.*

¶ I bray, *Ie bray, Ie brahi, I' ay brait, Braire, bray-*
ant.

¶ *Brui*, is before in the ſecond.

¶ I

¶ I gird, *Ie ceins, tu ceins, il ceint, Nous ceignons: Ie ceigni, I'ay ceinct, Ceindre, Ceignant.*

In like manner, *Craindre, Astreindre, estreindre, contraindre, feindre, teindre, peindre, restreindre, oindre, joindre, enfraindre,* and all in *aindre, eindre,* and *oindre,* saving these three, *Aveindre, Teindre,* and *esteindre,* which are thus conjugated.

¶ I colour, or dye, *Ie Tein, je teigni,* or *teindi, I'ay teint, Teindre, Teignant,* or *teindant:* so the others.

¶ I shut, *Ie clos, je closi, j'ay clos, Clorre, closant.* So *Enclorre, forclorre, esclorre, renclorre.*

¶ I conclude, *Ie conclu,* or *clus: nous concluons, je conclus, j'ay conclus, Conclurre, Concluant. Ie conclurray.* So *excluurre, reclurre,* and *forclurre.*

¶ I confect, *Ie confi, je confis, j'ay confit, confire,* or *confir, confisant.* So *déconfire.*

¶ I sew, *Ie couds: nous cousons, je cousi,* or *cousis, j'ay cousu, Coudre, cousant.* So *découdre, recoudre.*

¶ I beleeve, *Ie croy, je creu, I'ay creu, Croire, croyant.* So *Mescroire, descroire; Accroire* hath but the infin.

¶ I grow, *Ie croy,* or *crois: nous croissons, je creu, j'ay creu,* or *je suis creu. Croistre, croissant, je croistray.* So *Accroistre, descroistre, parcroistre, surcroistre.*

¶ I seethe, *Ie cuis, nous cuisons, je cuisi, j'ay cuit, cuire, cuisant.* So *Decuire, recuire;* also *duire, conduire, deduire, induire. produire, reduire, introduire, esconduire, seduire, traduire:* also *Construire, destruire, instruire.*

¶ I say, *Ie dy, tu dis, il dit: Nous disons, vous dites,*

ils

ils diſent, or *dient*, *je dis*, *j'ay dit*, *Dire*, *diſant*.

Imperative, *Di*, *qu'il diſe* or *die*, *Diſons*, *dites*, *qu'ils diſent* or *dient*. Preſent optative, *que ie diſe* or *die*, *tu diſes* or *dies*, *il diſe* or *die*, *diſions*, *diſiez*, *diſent* or *dient*. So *contredire*, *deſdire*, *maudire*, *meſdire*, *predire*, *redire*; ſaving that *maudire* hath it participle *maudiſſant*.

¶ I write, *I'eſcri*: *nous eſcrivons*. *j'eſcrivi*, *j'ay eſcrit*, *eſcrire*, *eſcrivant*. So *deſcrire*, *inſcrire*, *preſcrire*, *proſcrire*, *reſcrire*, *ſouſcrire*, *tranſcrire*.

¶ I frye, *Ie fri*: *je fri*, *j'ay frit*, *frire*, *friant*.

¶ I know, *Ie cognoy*, or *connoy*: *nous connoiſſons*, *je conneu*, *j'ay connu*, *Connoiſtre*, *connoiſſant*. So *Deſconnoiſtre*, *meſconnoiſtre*, *reconnoiſtre*.

¶ I melt, *Ie fon*, or *fons*: *nous fondons*, *je fondi*, *j'ay fondu*, *fondre*, *fondant*. So *Confondre*, *morfondre*, *refondre*; alſo *Tondre*, *reſpondre*, *correſpondre*; alſo *Rompre*.

¶ I make, or doe, *Ie fay*, *ais*, *ait*, *Nous faiſons*, *vous faites*, *ils font*. *Ie fi*, or *fei*, *j'ay fait*, *Faire*, *faiſant*, *je feray*. Imperative, *Fay*, *qu'il face*, *faiſons*, *faites*, *qu'ils facent*. Preſent optative, *que je face*. So *Defaire*, *contrefaire*, *forfaire*, *meffaire*, *parfaire*, *refaire*, *ſatisfaire*, *ſurfaire*.

¶ I ſhine, *Ie luy*, *je luiſi*, *j'ay luy*, *luire*, *luiſant*. So *Reluire*, *entreluire*; alſo *Nuire*.

¶ I put, *Ie mets*, *je mis*, *j'ay mis*, *Mettre*, *mettant*. So *Admettre*, *commettre*, *demettre*, *permettre promettre*.

¶ I bite, *Ie mor*: *nous mordons*, *je mordi*, *j'ay mors*, or *mordu*, *mordre*, *mordant*. So *demordre*, *remordre*; alſo

Tordre,

Tordre, détordre, retordre.

¶ I grind, *Ie mouds*, or *meuds*, *je moulu*, *j'ay moulu*, *Moudre*, or *meudre*, *Moulant* or *meulant*. So *Esmoudre*.

¶ I am borne, *Ie nais*, *je naſqui*, *je ſuis nay*, or *né*. *Naiſtre*, or *naſquir*, not ſo much uſed. *Naiſſant*, *Ie naiſtray*, or *naſquiray*, ſeldome uſed.

¶ I abſolve, *I'abſouds*, *j'abſolu*, *je abſoult*, or *abſolu*, *Abſoudre*, *Abſolvant*. So *Diſſoudre*.

¶ I ſlay, *I'occi*: *nous occions*, or *occiſons*. *I'occis*, *j'ay occis*, *Occire*, or *occir*, *occiant*.

¶ I feed, *Ie pais*: *nous paiſſons*, *je peu*, *j'ay peu*, *paiſtre*, *paiſſant*. So *Repaiſtre*.

¶ I loſe, *Ie pers*: *nous perdons*, *je perdi*, *j'ay perdu*, *Perdre*, *Perdant*. So *Reperdre*.

¶ I pleaſe, *Ie plais*: *nous plaiſons*. *je pleu*, *j'ay pleu*, *plaire*, *plaiſant*. So *complaire*, *deſplaire*.

¶ I lay an egge, *Ie pons*, or *ponds*, *je pondi*, or *ponni*, or *ponnu*. *I'ay ponds*, or *pondu*, or *ponnu*, *Pondre*, *pounant*, or *pondant*.

¶ I take, *Ie pren*: *nous prenons*. *je prin*, *prins*, or *pris*, *j'ay pris*, or *prins*, *prendre*, *prenant*.

The third perſon plurall of the definite, *ils prindrent*, or *prirent*. So *apprendre*, *comprendre*, *deſaprendre*, *entreprendre*, *eſprendre*, *meſprendre*, *reprendre*, *ſurprendre*.

¶ I ſhave, *Ie xay*, *tu rais*, *il rait*, *Nous raſons*. *j'ay rais*, *raire*, *je rairay*. Imperative, *Ray*.

¶ I laugh. *Ie ri*, *je ri*, *j'ay ri*, *je riray*, *rire*, *riant*.

¶ I

¶ I ſummon, *Ie ſemonds, je ſemonmi* or *ſemon*
I'ay ſemonmu, or *ſemons, ſemendre, ſemonnant*, or *ſem*
dant.

¶ I ſolve, *Ie ſouds, je ſolu*, or *ſolvi*, *I'ay ſolu, ſou*
ſolvant.

¶ I riſe, or ſpring up, *Ie ſourds, je ſourdi, j'ay ſol*
ſourdre, ſourdant. It is more uſed impersonally,
ſourd, il ſourdit, il eſt ſourſ, il ſourdra.

¶ I follow, *Ie ſuis: nous ſuivons, je ſuivi, j'ay ſui*
Suivre, or *ſuivir* little uſed. *Suivant.* So *Accon ſuiv*
enſuivre, entreſuivre, pourſuivre.

¶ I am ſilent, *Ie tay, je teu. j'ay teu, taire, taiſant.* O
rather *Ie me tay, je me teu, je me ſuis teu, je me te*
tay.

¶ I draw, *Ie tray, je trahi, j'ay trait, traire, trayan*
So *Attraire, diſtraire, extraire, pourtraire, ſouſtrai*
fortraire.

¶ I weave, *Ie tis, je tiſſi, j'ay tiſſu, Tiſtre*, or *tiſſe*
Tiſſant, je tiſtray.

¶ I overcome, *Ie vainc*, or *vancs*, or *vanqs*, *I*
vainqui, j'ay vaincu, vaincre, vainquant, Ie vaincray
So *ſurvaincre, convaincre.*

¶ I live, *Ie vi: nous vivons, Ie veſqui*, or *veſcu, I'a*
veſcu, vivre, vivant. So *revivre*, and *ſurvivre.*

Of Verbs Impersonalls.

To conjugate verbes impersonalls, is to runn
through all the third persons singular; accordin
to the conjugation unto which they belong
which is knowne by the termination of their in-

natives. We have two ſorts of Impersonalls: one, which ſeemeth of a paſſive ſenſe, hath *On* or *Lon* afore it, as *On dit, dicitur*, men ſay, they ſay, or it is ſaid, *On aime*, one loveth, men love, they love. *On eſt aimé*, one is loved, men are loved. *On court*, men runne, they runne, or one runneth, &c. Another ſort are actives, and have afore them the partic. *Il*, it, or there. All of the firſt conjugation are regular, except *Il va*: as *Il reſte, il faſche, il tarde, il ſoucie, il conſte, il couſte, il grieve, il poiſe, or péſe, il importe, il manque, il regne, il profite, il tombe, il arrive, il ſemble, il démange, il gele, il tonne, il graſſe, il eſclaire, il neige, il ſe trouve, il ſe controuve, il ſ'invente, il ſe forge, il ſe meſle, il ſe range*, &c. Of the ſecond, *Il vient, il convient, il advient, il intervient, il provient, il ſouvient, il tient, il appartient, il ſert, il court, il meurt, il ſort, il ſe nourrit, il ſe pourrit, il ſe ravit*, &c. Of the third, *Il ſied, il chet, il eſchet, il vaut, il faut, il chaut, il deut, il pert, il appert, il apparoiſt, il pleut, il ya, il ſe void, il ſe croit, il ſe reçoit, il ſ'apperçoit*, &c. Of the 4th, *Il eſt, il ſuffit, il naiſt, il prend, il pend, il cuit, il doit, il nuit, il ſuffit, il fait, il ſe fait, il plaiſt, il croiſt, il ſe met, il ſe permet, il ſ'enſuit, il ſe commet, il ſe rompt, il ſe perd*, &c. In a word, all verbes actives and paſſives may become impersonalls, by ſetting *il* with the pronoune *ſe* afore their third perſons, as *Il ſe trouve, il ſe traite, il ſe rencontre, il ſe ſeme, il ſe cueille, il ſe converſe, il ſe divertit, il ſ'eſclaircit*, &c. infinitely.

Il faut, il chaut, il vaut, is thus conjugated. *Il*

faut

faut, it behooveth. Imperfect, *il faloit*, perfect, *Iut*, 2. perfect, *il a falu*. Infinitive, *faloir*. Future *faudra*. Opt. present, *il faille*. So *Il chant*, *il chaloit*, *il vaut*, *il valoit*, &c. *Il y a* is conjugated through the third persons singular of *Avoir*, putting *il y* afore; as *Il y a*, there is, *il y avoit*, there was, *il y* there was, *il y a eu*, there hathbeene, *il y avoit* there had bin. *il y aura*, there shall be, &c. *Il loist* defective, and hath onely *il loist*, it is lawfull, *loisoit*, and present Optat. *il loise*. *Affiert* is defective, and hath onely, *il affert*, it belonge or is the dutie, *Il afferoit*, *il afféra*, and present tat. *qu'il affére*.

Chap. VII.

Of Adverbs, and the other undeclinable parts.

Very many Adverbes (especially of quali are made (as also in English) of Adjectiv by adding to the termination *Ment*; as in E lish the termination *Ly*; as *Sagement* wisely, *dentment* prudently, *legerement* lightly, *abond ment* abundantly, *secondement* secondly, *superf ment* superfluously, &c. And sometimes Ad ctives themselves are put for adverbes, as *Par clair* for *clairement*, speake plainely. *Allez viste* viste*ment*, goe quickly. So *juste*, *fort*, *droit*, *haut*, *le soudain*, and many others are used.

The other Adverbs, Conjunctions, Prepos ons, &c. because they doe often much trouble t

le

manner, I thought good here, though promiscuously and disorderly, yet alphabetically, to set downe for their better finding; at least, so many of them as doe most frequently occurre.

A to, at, in, by, for.

à l'advenir, in time to come.

à cause, by cause.

à costé, à costiere, aside, side-wise.

à coup, at once; speedily.

à coup perdu, in vaine.

à tous coups, eft-soones

à la droite, on the right hand.

à la gauche, on the left hand.

à fin que, à ce que; à fin de, to the end that.

à la fin, in the end.

à la par fin, at the last.

à peine, scarcely.

à grand peine, with much adoe.

à heure, in time.

à temps, in time.

à l'heure, at the houre.

à la bonne heure, luckily, in good time.

à ceste heure, now.

à l'instant, at that instant.

alorsque, then when.

à l'heure que, at the houre when.

à chef de piece, in the end, at length.

aga, see; looke.

à jamais, for ever.

à tout jamais, or *à tousiours mais*, for ever and evet.

à raison dequoy, by reason whereof.

à l'escart, à quartier, apart, aside, asunder.

à part, aside, apart.

à l'escient, wittingly, or of set purpose.

à bon escient, in good earnest.

à guiſe, à la guiſe, à mode, à la mode, after the manner or faſhion.

à l'entour, about, or round about.

à couuert, covertly.

à découuert, openly.

ains, ainſois, or *ainçois*, but, but rather, ere.

ainſois que, albeit.

ainſi, ſo, as, like as.

ainſi que, ſo as, whilſt that, like as.

ailleurs, elſewhere.

alors, then, *alors que*, when, then when.

à la volee, raſhly, at randome.

à l'endroit, to the right place.

à l'environ, thereabouts, round abouts.

à condition que, à la charge que, on condition that.

à raiſon que, à meſure que, by meaſure, or degrees as, even as, by how much as.

à droit, by right.

à tort, wrongful wrong.

à point, aptly, in time.

à bon droit, by good right.

à temps, in time.

à point nommé, in good time, at the time appointed, fitly.

à la haſte, haſtily, haſt.

à la chaude, hotly, in heat.

ainſi comme, like as.

à l'aide, au ſecours, help, helpe.

à l'arme, arme, arme.

au meurtre, murder, murder.

au feu, fire, fire, &c.

à l'encontre, againſt.

apres, after.

à plus prés, within little.

à peu prés, or *au peu prés*, well-neere, almoſt.

au plus prés, as nee

as may be.
à l'envi, in despite, or emulation, or strife one of another.
à qui mieux, mieux, with strife who shall doe best.
à qui pis-pis, with strife who shall do worst.
à l'adventure, by chance.
à tout hasard, at al adventure.
à tant, thus, by this, hereupon.
à pur et à plain, flatly, plainly.
à plein, fully.
à clair, cleerely.
à net, neatly, *au net*, exactly, perfectly.
à sec, as *estre à sec*, to be on dry ground, or gravelled.
à profit de mesnage, roundly, throughly, to purpose.
à nud, mettre à nud, to strip.
à blanc, mettre à blanc, to strip into the shirt.
à la pareille, for the like, good turne. so *au reply preque*.
à matin, at morning, *au matin*, in the morning.
à soir, at evening, *au soir*, in the evening.
arriere, behind: away no more.
asçavoir, to wit, that is to say.
asçavoir mon, whether or no?
à tout le moins, au moins, at the least, at least.
à l'impourveu, à despourveu, à l'improviste, *au despourveu*, at unawares, suddenly, unlooked for.
à l'estourdi, amazedly, heedlesly, rashly.
assez, enough.
assez long temps, a very long time.
attendu que, seeing that, or considering that.
à travers, au travers, athwart, crossely.
assez peu, little enough.

à rebours, au rebours, à contre pied, à contre-poil, backward, contrariwise, against the hair, kimkam.
au contraire, on the contrary.
aux, and plurall number *aux*, to the, at the, in the, for the.
au moien dequoy, by means whereof.
au plus, at the most.
au moins, at the least.
avant, before, forth, forward.
avant-hier, two daies ago
avec, with. *avec ce*, with all.
avec le temps, at length, in time.
au dedans, within, inwardly.
au dehors, without, outwardly.
au loing, afar off, aloof off
aucune fois, sometime.
au derriere, behind.
au devant par derriere, the wrong way.
au devant, before.
au dessus, above, on high
au dessous, under, beneath, below, underneath.
au deça, on this side, on the hither side.
au de là, on that side, beyond, on the further side.
au bout de tout, at length, so *à la longue*.
aujourd'huy, to day, at this day.
aux entours, thereabouts.
autour, about, round about.
au regard, in respect.
au demourant, moreover.
au mieux aller, let the best come to the best.
au pis aller, let the worst come to the worst, come what may.
au pis, at the worst.
au prix, in comparison.
au reste, moreover; so *au surplus*.
au prealable, first and formost, after the rate.
aussi, also, so, as.

autrement, otherwise.
autre fois, heretofore, in times past.
au paravant, before, before time, heeretofore.
autant, as much, as well. as many, so much, so many.
autant de fois, as many times.
Beaucoup, much, many.
Bien, well, very; else.
Bien peu, very little.
Bien que, although.
Bas, under, low, below.
Bonnement, well.
Bellement, fairely, gently, softly, leisurely.
bonne pièce, a good while agoe.
ça, hither, to this place, come hither, give hither.
ça & là, here and there, hither and thither, scatteringly.
ça-sus, here above.
ça-haut, here on high.
ça-bas, here beneath.
ça-ça, come ho, forward.
Car, for.
Ceans, here within.
Cependant, in the meane while, in the meane time.
Certes, certainement, truly.
Chez moy, with me, at my house, at home. *Chez luy*, at his house, &c.
Comme, as, like as.
Comme ainsi soit que, albeit, howsoever it bee that.
Comment, how.
Combien, how much? how many?
Combien que, although.
Combien de fois, how many times?
Combien y-a-il? how many is there? how much is there? how long is it agoe?
Contre, against.
Cy, here, hither.
Cy-apres, hereafter.
Cy-devant, heretofore.

Coup-sur-coup, often, eft-soones.

D'abondant, *d'advantage*, moreover.

D'abordee, *d'abordade*, *d'arrivee*, at first, at first sight, comming or meeting, so soone as come.

D'entree, *d'intrade*, at first entrance, so soone as come in.

D'adventure, *de fortune*, *de cas fortuit*, by chance, perhaps, peradventure, by fortune.

De prime face, at first sight, at first.

D'asseurance, boldly, with confidence.

D'an en an, from yeare to yeare, *de jour en jour*, from day to day.

De bien en mieux, from good to better, better and better, so *de mieux en mieux*, better and better.

De mal en pis, from evil to worse, worse and worse.

De pis en pis, worse and worse.

D'ailleurs, from elsewhere from another place.

Dans, *dedans*, in, within.

De dedans, *du dedans*, from within.

D'autant que, for as much as.

De, of, from, with.

Du, *des*, of the, from the, &c.

De bonne heure, early, betimes, in good time.

D'avec, from.

de-ça, on this side, hither.

de-là, on that side, over, beyond, from thence.

de ceans, of this house.

d'icy, hence.

de pardeça, on this side.

de pardela, on that side.

d'ici pres, hard by.

de jour, by day.

nuit, by night.
illec, from thence.
d'enhaut, from on high, from above.
d'embas, from beneath, or from below.
Dehors, out, without, abroad.
de dehors, from abroad.
du dehors, from without, or from abroad.
d'ici à peu, a little hence, a while hence, it wants but little time and ſpace to it.
De loing, from farre, a far off.
D'heure à heure, *d'heure en heure*, from houre to houre.
De ranc en ranc, from ranke to ranke.
De point en point, from point to point.
De fois à autre, eftſoones, ever and anon, from time to time.
De guet à pens, willingly, of ſet purpoſe, with premeditation.
Dea, or *Dà*, as *Ouy dà*, yea truely. *Non dà*, no truely.
De maniere que, *de ſorte que*, in ſuch ſort as, ſo that.
De meſme, in like manner, in like ſort, likewiſe.
Demain, to morrow.
de demain, by to morrow.
de matin, by morning, in the morning.
du matin, of, or from the morning.
de ſoir, by, or in the evening.
du ſoir, of, or from the evening.
derriere, behind, on the backe part, or ſide.
de derriere, *du derriere*, behind; of, or from behind.
devant, before, or the foreſide.
de devant, *du devant*, before,

fore, on the foreside, of or from before.

De fait, de propos deliberé, of set purpose, of an advised purpose.

de plein gré, with full liking, with full mind and good will.

Depuis, since, sithence, from.

du depuis, since thence, since, or from that time.

de peur que, least, least that for feare that, or for feare least.

de rang, desuite, by ranke, one after another.

d'ordre, by order.

Des, from, since.

Desque, so soone as.

dés-l'heure que, from the houre, or time that.

deslors, from that time forth.

dés-ja, already.

desormais, from henceforth.

de surcroist, de par en sus, de surplus, du surplus, par dessus, of overplus, over and above, over and besides, moreover.

De renfort, abundantly.

Derechef, againe.

Dessus, above, upon, over, on, on high.

Dessous, under, underneath, below, beneath.

devers, towards.

Devant, afore, *avant* hence.

Deux fois, twice.

De vray, in truth.

De fait, indeed, throughly.

Donc, doncques, then.

Devant hier, two dayes agoe.

Dont, whereof, whence, whereby, wherewith, whereupon.

Doresenavant, *dorenavant*, from henceforth, henceforward.

D'où, whence, from whence.

d'outre

...outre, en outre, through, and through.
Du commencement, from, or at the beginning.
Du temps de, in the time of.
Du temps passé, in times past.
Du tout, wholly, altogegether, throughly.
Droit en ce lieu, iust here, or in this place.
du val á mont, upwards, from the bottome to the top.
du mont á val, from the top to the bottome.
En, and plurall *es*, in, into.
En apres, afterwards.
En outre, moreover.
En fin, in the end.
En haut, on high.
En bas, below.
En amont, upwards.
En tout advenement, whatsoever happen.
En-y-a, agoe.
En-là, from thence.
Enhuy, to day, this day.
Enda, in faith, in truth.
Emmi, amidst, in or through the midst.
Encore, yet.
Encoreque, although.
Encontre, towards, against, right against, over against.
Endroit, by, neere about, towards.
En haste, in hast, hastily.
En verité, in truth, truely.
Ensemble, together.
Entre, between, amongst.
Entre-deux, indifferently, between both.
Entantque, in as much as.
Envers, towards.
Environ, about.
Entour, about, round about.
Expres, of purpose.

Finalement. at last, lastly.
Fin que, untill that.
Fin à tel jour, till such a day

fin que

a day.

Fin de conte, finally.

Fi, fy; fy away, (an interjection.)

Fors, forſque, except, vnleſſe: out.

Fort, very, very much, exceedingly, ſtrongly.

Gare, ware, beware.

Gare le heurt, ware horns

Gueres, guere, little, ſmall, but little, not much, not long.

Guere ſouvent, ſeldome.

Haulte heure, farre day.

Hier, yeſterday.

Herſoir, yeſternight.

Haut, highly, above, aloft, aloud, on high.

Hors, out, without.

Hors d'icy, hence.

Hormis, except, ſaving that.

Huy, to day, this day.

Ia, well-neere; lacking little: never, already.

Iadis, of old, in times paſt

Iaçoitque, Iuſoitque; though, albeit.

Iamais, never.

Ici, here. *Icy, illic*, thence thither.

Incontinent, forthwith.

Ia n'adveene que, God forbid that. *Ia à Dieu ne plaiſe que*, God forbid.

Incontinentque, ſo ſoone as.

Ioignant, neere to.

Ioint que, moreover, beſides that, alſo that.

Iournellement, daily.

Ius, down, to the ground

Ionxte, nigh to, according to.

Iuſques, untill, till, unto

Iuſqu' à quand, Iuſques à quand, how long? untill when, or till how long.

Iuſqu' à tantque, Iuſques à tantque, Iuſqu' à ceque, Iuſques à ceque, till ſuch time as, untill that.

Là, there, thither.

Là,

Là bas, there below, beneath, downewards.
Là haut, on high, above.
Leans, there within.
Le moins du monde, the least that can be.
Le lendemain, the next day.
Le passé, in times past.
Loing, farre, far off.
Lors, then.
Lorsque, when as, then when.
Mais, but.
Matin, morning.
Mais dé, more, any more.
Maisque, but what, so that.
Mais-huy, not to day, not so long as this day lasts.
Mesbuy, the same.
Maintenant, now.
Maintes fois, oftentimes.
Mal, ill, naughtily.
Malement, the same.
Midi noone.
Minuit, midnight.
Mieux, better.
Malaisement, hardly, uneasily, difficultly.
Mesmes, *mesmemẽt*, namely, especially.
Moins, least, lesse.
Mon, as *C'est mon*, yes indeed, *asçavoir mon si*, whether.
Mout, much, greatly.
Moyennant que, so that.
Moyennement, meanely, moderately, indifferently.
N'agueres, not long since, ere while, of late.
Ne, no, nor, neither.
Nenni, no.
Neantmoins, nevertheless.
Ni, *ny*, nor, neither.
Non, no, not.
Non pas? is it not?
Non obstant, notwithstanding.
Non pourtant, not for all that, notwithstanding.

Nul-

Nullement, no whit at all, in no case, in no sort.
Nulle part, no where.
Onc, ever, at any time.
Oncques, ever, (and with a negative) never.
Or avant, on forward.
Or, *ores*, now.
Or bien, well then, now well.
Or ça, *or sus*, goe to, well then.
Or donques, seeing then.
Or si, if then.
Or-primes, *à or-primes*, now at length: but even now, not before now.
Ores, now. *Ores que*, though now, when.
Ou, or, either, or els.
Où, where, whither, whereas.
Ou bien, or els.
Oultre, *outre*, over, beyond, besides, further, furthermore.
Outreplus, moreover.
Ouy, ey, yea, yes.
Ouy-da, yes indeed.
Ouy-dea, but indeed, firme.
Par, by, through.
Par ainsi, so, even so, this meanes, ther
Par ailleurs, by some ther way, by some els.
Par apres, afterwards.
par aupres, neer, hard
paraventure, peradventure.
par-cy, *par-ci*, this way
par-là, that way.
par-de-ça, on this side
Par-de-là, on that s beyond.
Parce que, because for as much as.
Par dedans, within, the in-side, inwa
Par dehors, without, wardly, on the side.
Par devant, before, on fore-part, in prese
Par derriere, behin backward.
Par dessus, upon, upwa abo

bove, aloft, over and above.
dessous, under, underneath.
divers, towards.
devant, before, heretofore, in times past.
eillement, likewise.
fois, now and then.
tant, therfore, on this condition.
tel si que, on condition that, so that.
mi, amidst, amongst.
sidevant, heretofore, in former times.
le passé, in times past.
quel, which way.
temps, in good time.
tout, every where, throughout.
trop, too much.
quoy, why? therefore, for this cause, for which cause.
not.
à pas, step by step.
sle-mesle, confusedly.
dans celà, in the mean time.
Pendant que, whilest that.
Petit à petit, leisurely, by little and little, faire and softly.
Peu à peu, by little and little.
Peu, little, few, a small deale.
Peu s'en faut, little wanteth it, well neere.
Peu souvent, seldome.
Peu de chose, a small matter.
peu apres, a while after.
peu-plus, peu-moins, little more or lesse.
Peut estre, it may be, perhaps.
Pis, worse, worst.
Pieça, long agoe, a great while since.
Pirement, as *pis*.
Plus, more.
Plusieurs fois, many times.
Plustost, sooner, rather.
Plus pres, neerer.
Plus loing, farther off.

Plus

Plus outre, further.
Plus haut, higher.
Plus bas, lower.
point, not.
Pour, for; instead.
Pour le plus, at the most.
Pour le moins, at the least.
Pour le mieux, for the best.
Pourquoy? why? wherefore?
Pource, because, therefore.
Pourveu que, so that, on condition that.
Pourtant, notwithstanding, for all that.
Pourtant que, because that, for as much as.
Pourautant que, for as much as.
Possible, pephaps.
Pose le cas que, put case that.
Premierement, *prealablement*, first, first and formost.
Pres, neere, nigh, well-nigh.
Presque, almost, nigh.
Promptement, *prestement* and *prest*, quickly.
Prou, enough, greatly.
Puis, then, moreover.
Puis apres, afterward, next after.
Puisque, seeing that.
Quand, when, though.
Quand à, or *quant à*, for, as touching.
Quant et, together with.
Quant & quant, forthwith, by and by.
Quasi, almost, as were.
Quantes fois, how often, how many times.
Que, that, as; than; but, saving.
Que bien, que mal, indifferently; well or ill, one way or other.
Quelque fois, sometimes.
Quelque part, some where.

Quelqu'part que, wheresoever, whithersoever.
Quelque peu, some little, some few, a very little.
Qu'ainsi soit, that so it is.
Quoy? what? why? how?
quoy que, although, howsoever.

Rarement, seldome.
Rien, any thing, or (with a negative) nothing.
Rière, backeward, behind.
Sans, without.
Sauf, saving.
Selon, according to, even as.
Semblablement, likewise.
Sens dessus dessous, topsie-turvie, upside-downe.
Sens, dessoubs dessus.
Sens devant derriere, the wrong way, preposterously, the cart before the horse.
Seulement, onely.
Si, if, if so bee that, whether; so; yes.
Si que, so as, so that.
Si toſt, so soone.
Si toſt que, so soone as.
Sinon, unlesse, but.
Sinon que, but that, saving that.
Si eſt-ceque, yet so it is that.
Si ce n'eſt, unlesse it be.
Soir, evening.
Sur le ſoir, toward evening.
Sur le tard, somewhat late.
Sur, on, upon, over, above.
Soubs, or *ſous*, under, underneath, beneath.
Soit, be it.
Souvent, often.
Souvente fois, oftentimes.
Soudain, suddenly.
Soudain que, so soone as.
Sur le champ, presently.
Sur-ce, hereupon.

Sus,

Sus, on, up, upon, over, above.
Sus de bout, up an end.
Sus avant, on before.
Tard, late, lately.
Tardement, slowly, lingringly.
Tandis, whilest.
Tant, so as, so much, so great, so many, so long, so well, as well.
Tant seulement, onely.
Tant soit peu, never so little, how little soever.
Tant pour tant, ratably.
Tant que, so much as, so many as, so long as.
Tantost, anon, by and by, forthwith.
Tellement, so, in such sort.
Tellement quellement, so so, indifferently.
Tout ainsi, even as, like as.
Tout autant, even as well, even as much, iust as much, or as many.
Tout beau, soft and faire, not too fast, so *bellement*.
Tout à coup, suddenly.
Tout à fait, throug wholly.
Tout à un coup, all at o or one time.
Tost, soone.
Tout à l'heure, at the v instant.
Tout incontinent, pres ly.
Tout outre, through through, wholly.
Tout à point, fitly.
Tout à la fois, all at on
Totalement, wholly.
Toutes fois, notwithst ding, yet, albeit.
Toutes-fois & quantes, often; so *Toutes quantes fois*.
Tousiours, alwayes.
Tous les iours, every
Tour à tour, turne turne.
Tout d'un train, all at clap or time.
Tres à bon escient, in

go

good earneſt, moſt earneſtly.
Tres-arriere, exceeding backward.
Tresbien, very well.
Tresmal, very ill.
Trespeu, very little, very few.
Trespres, very neer.
Treſlon, very farre.
Treshaut, moſt high.
Tresbas, moſt lowe.
Treſoutre, farre beyond.
Trop, too much, too, over-much, greatly, much.
Trop peu, too little.
Vers, towards.
Veu, ſeeing, conſidering.
Veu que, ſeeing that.
Viz à viz, right againſt.
Viſtement, and (in ſteed thereof) *viſte*, quickly, ſpeedily.
Vniment, with one accord.
Voire, yea, yea but, ſurely
Voirement, certainly, forſooth, indeed.
Volontiers, willingly.
Voici, ſee heere, looke heer, behold.
Voilà, ſee there, looke there, behold.
Vrayement, truely.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the Syntax or Conſtruction of the parts.

Firſt, of the Articles.

THeſe three, *le*, *la*, and *les*, being ſet afore verbs, and following them in conſtruction, are not Articles, but Pronounes; and beeing ſet afore Nounes, are Articles. Examples of both: *L'eſprit s'engourdit auſſi bien que le corps, ſi on ne le façonne à l'exercice des bonnes letres; et les vices ſ'y rampent aiſement,*

ſement, qui ne les ſarcle & arrache par meditatio action de vertu : The minde waxeth lumpiſh, well as the body, if wee doe not faſhion it by exerciſe of good literature; and vices doe e creep into it, if we doe not weed and pluck th up by meditation, and action of vertue. *La v eſt la vraye ſource de nobleſſe ; ſuivons-la :* vertue the true originall of nobility; let us follow it.

Secondly, they are ſet afore Pronounes P ſeſſives; as, *Le mien* mine, *le voſtre* yours. Thi ly, afore Participles having the force of Noun as, *L' ignorant*, the ignorant: *le malfaiteur*, the vill-doer. Fourthly, afore Verbs of the infiniti Mood, put for Nounes; as, *Le boire, & le man le ſauter, & le voltiger, font noſtre vie alonger :* go cheer and merriment lengthen out our life. Fi ly, afore ſome Prepoſitions ſet alone witho Nounes; as, *Cet homme à belle apparence par le hors, Ie neſçay comme il eſt par le dedans :* this m makes a fair ſhew outwardly, I know not how is within. *L' ennemi a gaigné le deſſus :* the enem hath gotten the upper hand.

For *de*, note; that where Adjectives are wa ting, it ſeemeth to ſupply their place; as, *Aut rité de Roy*, a Kings authority; for *authorité roy Ouvrage d' homme* or *humain*. Thus *de* is engliſh Of; as, *poiſſon de riveere*, river-fiſh, or fiſh of t river; *verdure d' herbe*, greenneſs of gr e; *vit de pieds*, ſwiftnes of feet: And ſo, generally, is

ed in thoſe phraſes which the Latines put in the Genitive or Ablative Caſes; as, *Homme de grande doctrine*, a man of great learning; *jeune homme de grande eſperance*, a young man of great hope; *ioyau de prix*, a jewell of price; *cheval de cent eſcus*, a horſe of an hundred crownes; *homme de bien*, an honeſt man, *d' honneur* of credit, *de ſçavoir* of knowledge, *d' eſprit* of wit, &c.

Secondly, *de* is alſo uſed when we expreſſe the efficient cauſe; as, *bruſler d' amour*, to burne with love; *ſouſpirer de triſteſſe*, to ſigh with ſorrow; *pallir de peur*, to be pale with feare; *rougir de honte*, to be red, or bluſh with ſhame. Thirdly, *de* is uſed when the matter is expreſſed whereof a thing is made; as, *Pourpoint de ſatin*, a ſattin doublet; *Maiſon de pierre*, a ſtone-houſe; *Armures d' acier*, ſteele armour: *Bas de ſoye*, ſilke ſtockings. Fourthly, *de* is uſed with Adverbes: as afore ſome of place, *Le maiſtre de ceans*, the maiſter of this houſe: *Le gouverneur d' icy*, the governour of this place: *Il vient de chez nous*, hee comes from our houſe. After theſe of quantity, *Combien, tant, autant, plus, beaucoup, aſſez, peu, prou, d' avantage, moins*; as, *Beaucoup d' argent*, much money; *peu d' eſprit*, little wit; *aſſez de vin*, wine enough, &c. Of denying; as, *La faim n' y a point de mauvais pain*, courſe bread is welcome to the hungry. Of diſdaining; as, *Fy de plaiſirs, d' eſtat & d' or, qui de vertu n' a le threſor*; fie on the pleaſure, honour and wealth, that hath

not the treasure of vertue. Fiftly, *de* is also applied to all Nounes and Verbs importing a scanling or certain quantity of matter; as, *Potee de vin*, a pot-full of wine; *chartee de foin*, a cart-load of hay; *paneree de fruits*, a basket-full of fruit; *chambree de filles*, a chamber-full of maidens: also *remplir de vin*, to fill with wine; *garnir de pierries*, to garnish with precious stones; *pourvoir de necessaires*, to provide with necessaries. So their contraries, *Desgarnir*, *desemplir*, *manquer*, &c. And heer let the English take heed, that in stead of *de*, they use not *avec* with; but say, *Garni d'argent*, not *avec de l'argent*, furnished with money; *orné de vertus*, not *avec de vertus*, adorned with vertues; *paree de tapisserie*, hung with tapestrie, &c. Sixtly, *de* is used in a frequent phrase importing disdaine, and beginning with *ce*, *un*, or the like; as, *Ce glouton de Thomas*, that gluttonous fellow Thomas; *un vaurien de laquais*, an ungracious lackey; *mon veillard de mari*, the old man my husband: and sometime in good part; as, *Mon bon homme de pere*, the good old man my father; *ma bonne femme de mere*, the good woman my mother. Lastly, *de* before proper names is sometimes omitted by Eclipsis; as, *La place Maubert*, the place of Maubert; *la rue Saint Denis*, Saint Denis street; *l'esglise*, *le pont*, *l'enseigne nostre Dame*, for *de nostre Dame*, the church, the bridge, the signe of our Lady; *la porte Saint Marceau*, the gate of

Saint

Saint Marceau; *l' Apocalypse Saint Iean*, the Revelation of Saint Iohn: And also in this proverbial speech, *C' est le ventre ma mere*, for *de ma mere, ie n'y retourne plus*, I will come no more there.

An exception from the fourth rule aboveſaid is, when one of the ſaid Adverbs of quantitie is ſet after the Subſtantive ſignifying the matter: for then (in ſtead of the indefinite *de*) are the definite Articles uſed; as *Vous aurez de l'argent aſſez*, you ſhall have money enough, in ſtead of *aſſez d'argent: il y a du courage trop*, for *trop de courage*, he hath courage too much; *de la faveur beaucoup*, or *beaucoup de faveur*, much favour. *I' ay du credit autant que vous*, or *autant de credit que vous*, I have as much credit as you. Alſo *pres* and *aupres* uſe the definite Articles; as, *Aupres du feu*, neere the fire, or by the fire ſide; *pres de l' Egliſe, loin de Dieu*; the neerer the Church, the farther from God. Alſo *bien* ſtanding for *beaucoup*; as, *Il a bien du pouvoir, du ſçavoir, de l' entendement, de la vertu*: hee hath much power, knowledge, underſtanding, vertue: *vous prenez bien de la peine pour moy*, you take much paines for me: *les guerres civiles ont bien apporte des calamites en France*, the civill warres have brought many calamities into France. Alſo after words of quantity, when there is ſome reſtrictive tearm reſtraining the Subſtantive, then may either the definite or indefinite Articles be uſed indifferently; *Combien avez vous achete des livres*, or *de livres*

de ce libraire? how many books have you boug[ht] of this bookſeller? *voicy un bouquet des fleurs*, or *fleurs de mon jardin*, heere is a poſie of flowres [of] my garden. The word *Force*, ſignifying quanti-ty, hath no article afore nor after; as, *Force bien*, much goods; *force eſcus*, many crownes, or ſtor[es] of crowns; *force ennuis*, many ſorrows: but when it ſignifieth ſtrength or force, it hath afore it the Article *à*, and *de* after it; as, *à force d' argent*, by force of money; *à force d' hommes*, by ſtrength of men.

Saint & *Maiſtre*, joined to ſome proper name, are conſtrued with indefinite Articles; as, *Les œuvres de Saint Auguſtin*, Saint Auſten's workes; *I' ay parlé à Monſieur Iean*, I have ſpoken to or with Maiſter Iohn.

Monſieur, *Madame*, and *Madamoiſelle*, in phra-ſes denoting a fooliſh and preſumptuous imita-tion, do admit the definite articles; as, *Vous faites du Monſieur*, you play the Gentleman: *Voila une gueuſe qui trenche de la Damoiſelle*, there is a begger cuts it out like a Gentlewoman: *Voicy un ſot, qui taille du brave*; heer is a foole, that would make himſelfe a brave fellow. So wee ſay, *Faire la Da-moiſelle*, to play the Gentlewoman; *Faire le ſuffi-ſant*, or *du ſuffiſant*, to make himſelfe a ſufficient man; *Tailler*, *trencher*, or *coucher du Gentilhomme*, to play the Gentleman.

A, *au*, *à l'*, *à la*, *aux* and *és*, are Prepoſitions

and doe lend us the dative case. The article *à*, being of the common gender, and of both numbers, is of value wholly indefinite; as, *Il appartient à Roy de gouverner*, &c. it belongs to a King to governe, that is, to any King whatsoever: and we may also say, *Il appertient à un roy*, &c. *A chiens*, or *à des chiens hargneux aureilles dechirees*, mangie dogs have torn ears.

First, by this article *à*, wee shew the use to wch a thing is dedicated, or the final cause; as, *Vn toict à brebis*, a sheep-coat; *un estuy à peignes*, a combe-case; *terre à froment*, a wheat-field, or ground for wheat. Secondly, an imputation; as, *Imputer à negligence*, to impute to negligence; *tourner à blasme, à reproche*; to turn to blame, to reproach. Thirdly, wee thereby shew the end or issue; as, *Reüssir à heureux effect*, to come to happy effect; *succeder à gloire*, to succeed gloriously; *tomber à honte*, to fall out shamefully; *tourner à perte, à dommage, à profit*, to turn to losse, to harme, to profit. Fourthly, by *à*, we shew the manner how a thing is done; as, *Marcher à pas contez*, to goe telling ones steps; *chercher à tastons*, to seeke groping; *aller à reculons*, to go backwards; *aller à cheval*, to go on horseback; *à pied*, on foot. Fiftly, the fashion, or some notable adjunct to the fashion of a thing, where *à* seems to signifie With; as, *Du taffetas à gros grain*, grograine or taffeta with a great graine or wale; *du passement à dentelles*, a lace

with needle-work peaks or edging; *un monstre reſveille matin*, a Watch with a larum. 6 Somtime it ſeems to ſignifie For; as, *Vn tel eſt tenu à homme de bien*, ſuch a one is held for an honeſt man; *ſçavant perſonnage*, for a man of knowledge; *prend' homme*, for a good man. *Si je ne vous ſuis Senateur, vous ne me ſerez pas à Conſul*: if I be not to you a Senatour, you ſhall not be to me a Conſull. Laſtly, it is imployed in many Adverbiall phraſes; as, *à tant*, by this, or thereupon; *à tard*, late; *à tort*, wrongfully; *à droit*, by right; *à ton & à travers*, overthwartly; *à peine*, ſcarcely; *à ſouhait*, wiſhedly; *à point, à propos*, fitly, or in due time; *à eſcient*, in earneſt. This Adjective *Tout* hath afore it the indefinite Articles, when it commeth afore a Subſtantive with *le* between; as, *Tout le monde*, all the world, every body; *de tout le monde*, *à tout le monde*. So *Maint, maints, mainte, maintes*, and *pluſieurs*, require onely the indefinite articles.

Au, à l', à la, aux and *és*, are definite Articles; as, *Se preſenter au Roy*, to preſent himſelfe to the King; *aller aux champs*, to go into the countrey; *à l' eſchole*, to ſchoole; *S'exercer aux arts liberaux*, or *és arts*, to exerciſe himſelfe in the liberall ſciences; *aux eſtudes*, or *és eſtudes*, in ſtudie; *ſe promener aux*, or *és jardins*, to walke in the gardens. Theſe two *aux* and *és*, when they ſignifie In the, or within the, are indifferently uſed; onely herein they differ, *és* ſignifies ſo only, & nothing

elſe

elſe: but *aux* (being applied to a thing) ſignifies alſo to the, or with the, or at the. Examples of both, *Vertu reſide és cœurs nobles*, vertue is reſident in noble harts: *Dieu a parlé aux prophetes, & és prophetes*, God hath ſpoken to the Prophets, and in the Prophets.

Theſe definite articles are uſed, firſt, to ſhew the inſtrument, wherewith a thing is made or done; as *Duit au marteau*, wrought with the hammer, *à la lime*, with the file; *compaſſé au compas*, compaſſed with the compaſſe; *eſquarri à l'eſquierre*, ſquared out with the ſquire; *dreſſé au niveau*, levelled with the levell, &c. 2. Alſo when wee give a note to a thing, wherby it may be known: as *La lune au teint d'argent*, the ſilver-coloured moone; *François au grand nez*, Francis with the great noſe; *La belle fille aux jaunes cheveux*, the faire maiden with the yellow haire. 3. When in phraſes wherein *Mode*, maner, or faſhion is underſtood, *à la*, is uſed: as *a la Françoiſe*, after the Freneh faſhion; for *à la mode Françoiſe*; *à la matelote*, after the Mariners faſhion, or guiſe, or like a Mariner. 4 To ſhew the poſſeſſion of a thing to the owner: as *Les gands de la*, or *à la Dame de ceans*, the Lady of the houſe her gloves; *Le cheval au Sieur de tel lieu*, the horſe of the Gentleman of ſuch a place. But when the proper name of the poſſeſſor is expreſſed, wee uſe *de* or *à*; as, *Le logis de* or *à Iaques*, Iames his houſe;

le

le laquais de or *à Monsieur*, the lackey of Maist &c. 5 These Dative Articles, *à, au, à la, à l'*, employed after the verb *faire*, and verbs of sens as *sentir, voir*; of permission, as *Laisser, permettr endurer, souffrir*, and some infinitives of othe verbs, when they are put for *par* by; as, *Ie vous fe ray payer à mon maistre*, I will cause you to be paid by my maister. *Ie vous feray tancer à Madame*, I will make my Lady chide you. *I' ay veu bastir au maçons ce logis*, I saw this house builded by the masons. *Ie vous ay ouy appeller à vostre maistre*, I have heard you called by your maister. *Ie feray nettoyer vos bottes au valet de ceans*, I will cause your boots to be made clean by the servant of the house.

The Definite articles are used afore *Sire*, speaking of the King; as, *le Roy nostre Sire*, the King our Lord, *du Roy nostre Sire, au Roy nostre sire*: or speaking of some notable Marchant; as, *Le sire Iosse envoye de Marchandise au sire Martin, qu'il avoit acheté du Sire Leonard*, Master Iosse sendeth wares to master Martin, which he had bought of master Leonard.

2. *Of Nonnes.*

THe Adjectives, which are set after their Substantives are, 1. of Colour, as, *Paroy blanchie*, a whited Wall; *prez verds*, greene Medowes, *Robe purpurine*, a purple robe; so *pain blanc*, white bread, *pain bis*, browne bread; *vin clairet*, claret

claret wine, *vin blanc*, white wine: 2. Of Elementarie qualities, such as *Chaud* hott, *froid* cold, *sec* drie, *humide* moist, *moite* wet, *aride* drie, *tiede* lukewarme; as *terre seiche* a drie ground, *temps pluvieux* raynie weather, *viande froide* cold meat. 3. Participles passive; as *Chemin batu* a beaten way, *un livre clos* a booke shut, *huis ouvert*, a dore open, *chambre garnie & tapissee*, a chamber furnished and hung. 4. Adjectives belonging to a Citie or Nation; as *La langue françoise*, the French tongue, *la mode Italienne*, the Italian fashion. 5. Two Adjectives to one Substantive are both set after; *Une femme vertueuse & sage*, the wise and vertuous woman. 6. Some others there be, of which no certaine rule can be given, but must be learned by use; as *Le bien & repos public*, the publike weale and rest, *un arbre fruitier*, a fruit-tree, *une terre labourable*, an arable land; *une foreſt fueillue*, a leavie forrest. Contrariwise, Adjectives of qualitie, quantitie, praise or dispraise, are set before their substantives; as *Grosse teste & prim col, est le commencement d'un fol*, a great head and slender neck, are the tokens of a foole. *Le vray ami est cognu au besoing*, the true friend is knowne in need; *vertueuse Dame*, a vertuous Lady; *bon cheval*, a good horse, *bonne espee* a good sword, *beau manteau*, a faire cloake, *belle maison* a faire house, *un sçavant homme*, a skilfull man; *vaillant Capitaine*, a valiant Captaine, *un mauvais ouvrier*, a naughtie workeman;

man; *ſotte opinion*, a fooliſh opinion. Secondly, all the cardinall numbers, are ſet before; as *cent eſcus*, an hundred crownes, *aagé de vingt ans*, twentie yeares old. Thirdly, theſe words, *Pluſieurs, maint, tout, quelque, chaſque*; as *Toute puiſſance*, all power, *pluſieurs choſes* many things, &c.

Sometimes, the ſubſtantive is not expreſſed, and the Adjective retaineth the gender of the ſubſtantive underſtood; as *Il vit à la françoiſe*, he liveth after the French faſhion; where *mode* is underſtood: *Donnez reſponce à la preſente*, give an anſwer to this Letter, where *Lettre* is underſtood.

Comparatives, when the compariſon is made betweene many, have theſe articles, or prepoſitions after them, *De, du, de la, d'entre, és, de l', des*; as *le plus vaillant de tous*, the moſt valiant of all; *le plus modeſte de la compagnie*, the moſt modeſt of the companie; *Ciceron le plus eloquent des Romains*, Cicero the moſt eloquent of the Romanes; *Le plus Docte d'entre les Philoſophes*, the moſt learned among the Philoſophers. By which examples you ſee, the French in comparing uſe the comparative, where the Latines and Engliſh, the ſuperlative. Yet note that ſometimes, when the comparative requireth a verb after it, there is added alſo ſome relative, as *qui, que, lequel, dont*, &c. as, *il eſt le plus vaillant homme que je connoiſſe*, he is the valianteſt man I know. *Voila la plus grande*

merveille

merveille dont j'ay jamais ouy parler, there is the greateſt wonder that ever I heard ſpeake of, *&c.* Marke alſo theſe phraſes, *C'eſt celuy qui me plaiſt le plus*, it is he that pleaſeth me moſt; *L'homme auquel je me fie le plus*, the man in whom I put moſt confidence; or *de qui je me defie le plus*, whom I diſtruſt moſt.

But when the compariſon is made betweene two, then the conjunction *Que*, and ſometime *de*, (engliſhed, than) is uſed; as *Ciceron eſtoit plus eloquent que Hortenſius*, Cicero was more eloquent than Hortenſius; *Plus coüard qu'un Liëvre*, more cowardly than a Hare. *La face n'eſt plus grande de demi pied*, the face is no greater than halfe a foot. *Ie voudrois apprendre d'un plus ſage que moy*, I would learne of one more wiſe than my ſelfe.

And here note well, that if the ſpeach require a verb after the conjunction *Que*, than, you muſt ſet *Ne* betweene the ſaid *que* and the verbe; as, *Vn tel eſt plus ſçavant qu'il ne paroiſt de prime face*, ſuch a one is more skilfull than hee makes ſhew to be at firſt ſight. *Vous avez mieux appris icy que vous n'euſſiez fait ailleurs*, you have learned better here, than you had done in another place. *Il parle autrement enhuy qu'il ne faiſoit hier*, hee ſpeakes otherwiſe to day, than hee did yeſterday. *Ie l'ay trouvé autre que je ne l'avois eſtimé*, I have found him another manner of man than I thought to have done. In which two laſt examples, you ſee

Autre

Autre and *autrement*, uſed in the ſame man with *que* and *ne*, as the former.

The French ſuperlative is onely uſed adjectively; as *Achilles a eſté treſvaillant*, Achilles hath beene moſt valiant; *Ciceron treſeloquent*, Cicero moſt eloquent.

3. *Of Pronounes.*

THe nominative caſes of pronounes are ſometimes ſet immediatly after the verbe, as *Feray-je mal afin que bien en vienne?* ſhall I doe evill that good may come thereof? *Crois-tu aux Prophetes?* beleeveſt thou the Prophets? *viendrez-vous avec nous?* will you come with us? 2. In phraſes (as it were) corrective, or having *Ce* afore it; *Di-je*, ſay I, *veux-je*, will I, *ce penſe-je* as I thinke, *ce croy-je* as I beleeve, *ce dit on* as they ſay. which make a ſhort parentheſis, as *C'eſt vous, ce diſent-ils, qu'ils cherchent*, it is you (as they ſay) whom they ſeeke; *Le Turc, ce dit-on, met ſus une puiſſante armee*, the Turke, they ſay, leavieth a mightie armie.

3. In adverſatives, elegantly expreſſed by *Si* for *toutes fois*; as *vous me blamez; ſi fay-je mon devoir*, you blame me, yet I doe my dutie. *Vous faites du Seigneur, ſi ſçait-on bien qui vous eſtes*, you make your ſelfe a Lord, yet men know well enough who you are. 4. After *Si* and *auſſi* conceſſives; as *Allez toſt ou je vous ay dit: Si feray-je*, or *auſſi feray-je*, goe quickly where I told you: ſo I will. *Pour bien*

apprendre, il faut bien eſtudier: Si faut-il, or *Auſſi faut-il*, for to learne well, one muſt ſtudy well: ſo one muſt. *Ie penſois que Monſieur ſe vouſiſt pourmener: Si veut il*, or *Auſſi veut-il*, or *Si fait-il*, or *Auſſi fait-il*, I thought my Lord would have gone to walke: ſo he will, or ſo he doth. And this is uſed throughout all the tenſes and perſons of the verbes, *Avoir, eſtre, faire, ſaloir* and *vouloir*. 5. In phraſes conceived by the Imperfect tenſe Optative, ſecretly including the adverſative *Though*; as *Ie ne le crain point fuſt-il un Roland*, I feare him not, were he a Rowland, or, though he were as valiant as was Rowland. *Ie ne le croyray-ja, m'en juraſt-il cent fois*, I will not beleeve him, ſhould he ſweare it to me an hundred times: that is, though he ſhould ſweare. 6. When ſome adverb or conjunction, ſuch as *Lors, alors, adonc, tant, à tant, ſi, auſſi, à ce, partant, bien*, and the like, begin the phraſe, then may the ſaid nominatives be ſet afore or after the verb; but beſt after, as *un tel eſt fort ſçavant, auſſi a-il pris grand peine*, ſuch a one is very learned, he hath alſo taken great paines; or, indeed he hath taken great paines. *à ce me veux-je oppoſer*, to this I will oppoſe my ſelfe. *Vous m'avez fait une promeſſe, or eſt il temps de l'accomplir*, you made me a promiſe, it is now time to performe it; *or verray-je ſi vous m'eſtes ami*, now ſhall I ſee if you be my friend: *or ſçaura-on quel homme vous eſtes*, now ſhall we know what manner of man

you

you are. 7. The conjunction *et*, conjoyning ſome appendix to a precedent ſpeach, makes the ſyllable *on* be ſet after the verb; *voila un honneſt homme, & fait on grand cas de luy*, there is an honeſt man, and much account is made of him. *Le Roy ſe porte bien, & dit on qu'il viendra bien toſt ici*, the King is in good health, and they ſay he will come hither ſhortly. 8. In ſome vehement wiſhes, ſuch as, *Fuſſe-je auſſi heureux que vous*, O that I were ſo happie as you; *à la bonne heure ſoyez vous venu*, In a good houre be you come: ſo *puiſſe-je mourir s'il n'eſt vray: maudit ſoit-il qui a fait ce tort.* 9 Laſtly in ſpeeches expreſſing difficultie, with *à peine, à grand regret, difficilement, malaiſement, à toute force*, as *vous parlez ſi bas, qu'à peine vous puis-je entendre*, you ſpeake ſo low, that I can hardly heare you; *un tel eſt ſi couſtumier de mentir, que bien envis le croit-on, voire quand il dit vray*, ſuch a one is ſo uſed to lie, that one hath much adoe to beleeve him, yea, when he ſpeakes truth.

Very ſeldome are the perſonall pronounes nominatives omitted; vnleſſe it be, 1. In anſwers by conceſſion or negation, to ſome enunciative ſpeach afore-going; as *vous eſcrivez: ce fay-mon*, you write; t'is true, I doe: or *non fay*, I doe not. *Si faites*, but you doe. 2. When *et*, or *et ſi* coupleth ſome appendix to ſome ſpeach afore-going, wherein the perſon was ſufficiently expreſſed: *vous m'avez bien conſeillé, & vous croyray une autre*

fois

you have counselled me well, and I will be-
ve you another time. *Il vous respecte, & si vous*
viera bien, he respects you, and surely hee will
ve you well. 3. In the latter clause of a speach,
ter que; as *I'ay receu les letres que m'avez envoyees*,
have received the letters you sent me. *Vous voyez*
avons soin de vous, you see wee have care of
ou.

These accusatives and datives, *me, te, se, vous,*
ous, luy, leur, and *le, la, les*, are ever set before their
erbe; *Ie le vous ay dit*, I have told it you; *Ie leur*
criray, I will write unto them; *respectons les gens*
de bien, car Dieu les aime, let us respect honest
olke, for God loveth them.

And observe here the order: in affirmative speaches, the nominative pronoune begins, then comes one of the foresaid datives or accusatives, and then the verb; as in the former examples, and nothing else is to be betweene them and the verbe; except *ne*, which goeth betweene the nominative and the said accusative, or dative, as *Ie ne vous refuse pas*, I refuse you not. *Si vous ne me vouliez tenir promesse, il ne me la falloit pas faire*, if you were not willing to keepe mee promise, you should not have made it to me. Except also the relatives *en* and *y*, which are set ever immediately before the verb.

From this rule is excepted imperative speaches, wherein the said accusatives and datives are set

after the verb, as *Eſcrivez luy*, write unto h*im*; *baillez moy à boire*, give me ſome drinke. *Serv*e *moy à mon gré, ou vous en aillez*, ſerve mee to m*y* liking, or get you gone. Yet this exception is not without theſe foure limitations: 1. That we uſe not *Me* and *te* after imperatives, but in their ſtead *moy* and *toy*; as *Oſte toy de là*, get thee away from thence. 2 That, if there bee a ſecond imperative Verb joyned to the firſt by ſome conjunction, then in the ſecond, the ſaid accuſative or dative is ſet before; as *Si vous voyez mes amis, ſaluez-les, & leur dites que je me porte bien.* If you ſee my friends, ſalute them, and tell them that I am well. 3. That *Se* is ever ſet before the Verb, as *qu'il ſe ſouvienne de moy*, let him remember mee. 4. That, in prohibitive ſpeaches, or negative imperatives, they are ſet before; as *Ne luy faites point de mal*, doe him no evill; *Ne le dites à perſonne*, tell it to no body; *ne la faſchez point*, anger her not.

If both a Dative and an Accuſative (which is ever one of theſe, *le, la, les,*) come before the verb, for their placing, obſerve theſe rules: 1. If the Datives be *luy*, or *leur*, then they are ſet after the Accuſative; as, *Qui trouvera les gands à Madame, qu'il les luy rende*, he that ſhall finde my Ladies Gloves, let him reſtore them unto her. 2. *Se* Dative is ever ſet afore, and the Accuſative after; as *Ces beaux ornamens-là, Madame ſe les fait faire*, theſe ſame faire ornaments, my Lady cauſed to

be made for her selfe. 3. If the Datives be *me*, *te*, *nous*, or *vous*, they may bee placed indifferently, before or after; as *Si vous avez affaire de mes livres, je les vous presteray*, or *je vous les presteray*; If you have need of my bookes, I will lend you them, or I will lend them to you. *Ie ne la vous*, or *je ne vous la donneray pas*, I will not give it you. 4. So also in imperatiue speaches, the Accusative first followes the verb, then the Dative; (except it be *Se*, which ever goes afore the verb:) as *Sa requeste est juste, ottroyez-la-luy*, his request is just, grant it him. 5. In speaches where are two verbes, and the second an infinitive, you may place indifferently your Pronounes, before one of the two verbs; as *vostre demande est raisonnable, je vous veux l'ottroyer*, or *je vous la veux ottroyer*. 6. But if the infinitive have before it a preposition, your Pronounes must be placed betweene the preposition and the infinitive; as *Ie desire de la vous ottroyer*, I desire to grant it you; *I'ay oublié à les vous envoyer*, I forgot to send them to you.

Ce joyned with a substantive, signifieth This; as *Ce livre est doctement composé*, this book is learnedly compiled; *Cette harangue est elegamment tissue*, this Oration is eloquently made. 2. *Ce* is also set afore *qui* and *que*; as *Ie ne croy pas ce que vous dites*, I beleeve not that which you say; *Ie feray ce qu'il vous plaira*, I will doe what you please. 3. *Ce* is often used with a verb Substantive, and then

commonly ſignifieth It; as *C'eſt la verité*, it is truth; *c'eſt moy*, it is I, *c'eſt luy* it is he, *c'eſt nous* is wee; which may alſo be ſaid; *Ce ſuis-je*, it is *ce ſommes-nous*, it is we; *c'eſt eux*, or *ce ſont eux*, is they, or them; *C'eſt bien dit*, it is well ſaid; *ſera ſagement parlé*, it will be wiſely ſpoken; *eſté ſubtilement argué*, it hath beene ſubtilly diſputed; *c'euſt eſté prudemment adviſé*, it had been wiſely adviſed. And in queſtions; *qui eſt-ce?* who is it? *eſt-ce moy?* is it I? *eſt-ce luy?* is it he? *fuſt-ce eux?* was it they? *qu'eſt-ce?* what is it? *quand fut-ce?* when was it? *Où a-t'eſté?* where was it? *Sera-ce nous qui payerons*, ſhall it be us that ſhall pay? or muſt we pay? *eſt-ce vous dont on parle tant?* is it you they ſpeake of ſo much? But ſometimes, afore this verb (eſpecially, when it is not put impersonally) *Ce* ſignifieth This, or theſe; as *Ce fut la cauſe qui l'induiſit*, this was the cauſe that moved him; *Ce ſont de claires & evidentes raiſons*, theſe are cleare and evident reaſons. Laſtly, *Ce* is uſed vulgarly in anſwers, afore the enclitick *Mon*, ſet after the verbes *faire*, *avoir*, *eſtre*, *ſaloir*, *vouloir*; as *c'eſt mon*, it is indeed; *ce fay-mon* I doe indeed; *ce faut-mon*, it muſt indeed; *ce veux-mon*, I will indeed, &c.

Cecy and *cela* may forme a ſpeach, which *Ce* cannot; as *Si vous m'oſtez cecy, je prendray cela*, if you take away this, I will take that. Here *Ce* cannot be uſed. 2. They are uſed with an Adjective

put

for a Substantive; as, *Cela est vray*, that is true; *Cecy est clair & evident*, this is cleare and manifest; *cecy est bon*, this is good; *cela est beau*, that is faire.

3. They are used with a Substantive of the Genitive case, and the same verb; as *Cela est de bonne grace*, that hath a good grace; *Cecy est de grand travail*, this is of great labour; *Cela sera de plaisir*, that will be a pleasure.

Cetuy hath neither feminine, nor plurall, and may be used in absolute answers; as *Qui t'a pousse*, who hath thrust thee? *Luy* he, or *Cetuy* he; not *celuy*. *De ces deux freres, cetuy me plaist fort*; of these two brethren, this likes me well.

Celuy hath it feminine *celle*, it pluralls *ceulx*, *celles*, and serveth for antecedent to the Relatives *qui, que, lequel, dont*; or afore the Articles *de, du, des*; as *Celuy que vous voyez*, hee which you see; *Ceux qui s'enfuyent*, they which runne away; *Celle qui s'en va*, she which goeth her way; *Celuy qui aime Dieu, croit en celuy qu'il a envoyé*, he which loveth God, beleeveth in him whom hee hath sent. And afore the Articles thus; *Vos accoustremens d'aujourd'huy vous siesent mieux que ceux d'hier*, your apparell you weare to day, becomes you better than them you had yesterday; *Ce n'est icy mon cheval, c'est celuy de mon frere*, this is not my horse, it is my brothers; *Ils ont mieux aimé la gloire des hommes que celle de Dieu*, they have loved better the glory of men than of God; *Chacun cherche plus son*

profit, que celuy du public, every man loveth more his owne profite, than that of the Common-weale.

Mien, tien, ſien, are uſed in anſwer of queſtions or abſolutely; *à qui eſt ce livre? Mien, tien, ſien*, whoſe booke is this? mine, thine, his. *à qui eſt cette eſpee? miéne, tiéne, ſiéne?* whoſe ſword is this? mine, thine, his. *Vn tel loe un cheval, parce qu'il n'en a point du ſien*; ſuch a one hireth a horſe, becauſe he hath none of his owne. *Vous demandez de bottes à emprunter, ſi j'en avois des miénes, je vous les preſterois*: you aske to borrow boots; if I had of mine owne, I would lend them you. *Si vous n'avez point de cheval, je vous preſteray le mien*; if you have not a horſe, I will lend you mine. *à qui eſt ce livre? mien*, or *il eſt mien*, or *c'eſt le mien*, whoſe is this booke? mine, it is mine, which may alſo be ſaid, *C'eſt mon livre, il eſt à moy. à qui eſt cette plume? miéne, elle eſt miéne, c'eſt la miéne*; and otherwiſe *C'eſt ma plume, elle eſt à moy*. Nevertheleſſe they may be ioyned to ſubſtantives, when any of theſe *un, une, ce, cette, quelque, nul, nulle, aucun, aucune, tel, telle, chaque, chacun, chacune*, come before them; as, *un mien ami m'a convié à ſouper*, a friend of mine hath bid me to ſupper. *Quelques tiens ſages voiſins m'ont advertid' aucuns fols deportmens tiens*, ſome of thy wiſe neighbours have told me of ſome of thy fooliſh behaviours.

Noſtre, voſtre, and *leur*, are uſed, either conjunctively, as *noſtre force eſt du treſhaut*, our ſtrength is from the moſt high. *Leur cœur eſt faux & leur*

langue pleine de menſonges, their heart is falſe, and their tongue full of lies: And with *un, ce, quelque, &c.* afore; *un noſtre ami*, a friend of ours, *quelque voſtre voiſine*, ſome neighbour of yours; *un leur ami*, a friend of theirs: Or abſolutely, as *à qui eſt ce livre? Noſtre*, ours; *il eſt noſtre*, or *c'eſt le noſtre*, it is ours (which may alſo be ſaid, *c'eſt noſtre livre, il eſt à nous.*) *Mon cheval ſe deule d'un pied, preſtez moy le voſtre*, my horſe is pained of one foot, lend me yours. *à qui eſt ce livre? leur*, theirs, *il eſt leur*, or *c'eſt le leur*, it is theirs: or otherwiſe *c'eſt à eux. Les hommes font moins de cas de la perte d'autruy que de la leur*, men make leſſe reckoning of anothers loſſe, then of their owne.

And note that if the Subſtantive, ſignifying the thing poſſeſſed be ſingular, ſo muſt theſe be; if plurall, ſo muſt they; as *vos habits reſemblent les noſtres*, your apparell is like to ours; *Il n'eſt pas vray pere de famille qui n'a ſoin des ſiens*, hee is not a true father of a familie, that hath not care of his owne. *Les bons rois aiment leurs ſujets*, good kings love their ſubiects. *Des miénes, des tiénes, des ſiénes, des noſtres, des voſtres, des leurs*, are uſed ſometimes without Subſtantives, which are underſtood by an emphaticall eclipſis, *viz. des folies* follies, *des fredaines* knaviſh pranks, *des bravades*, bravadoes, or ſome ſuch like; as *Quand vous m'aurez bien fait endurer des voſtres, je pourrois bien faire des miénes*, when you have made me enough

endure your fooliſh pranks, I may wel play mine.

Iceluy, icelle, iceux, icelles, are meere Relatives, having reference onely to ſome antecedent, and cannot begin a ſentence: *Embraſſez les promeſſes de Dieu, & vous confiez en icelles*, embrace the promiſes of God, and truſt yee in them. *Dieu eſt mon roc, & je m'appuyeray ſur iceluy*, God is my rocke, and I will reſt my ſelfe upon him.

Qui is either a Relative or interogative: when it is a relative, it hath often *ce, celuy, ceux*, or *celles*, for Antecedents; as *Celuy qui aime Dieu, &c.* hee which loveth God, &c. *Ceux qui ſont nos voiſins, nous meſpriſent*, they which are our neighbours deſpiſe us; or ſome other Antecedent, as *Noſtre Pere qui es és cieux*, Our Father which art in heaven; or beginning a ſentence, *Qui eſt content eſt riche*, he which is content is rich; or without an antecedent, and then it ſignifieth who or whom, as *Ie ſçay bien qu'ils ſont*, I know well who they are. *Conſiderez de qui on parle & à qui*, conſider of whom they ſpeake, and to whom. So when it is an Interrogative, it is who, or whom; as *qui eſtez vous?* who are you? *qui cherchez vous*, whom ſeeke you? *de qui tenez vous ces nouvelles?* of whom have yee theſe newes?

Que, beeing a meere Relative, is the Accuſative caſe of *qui*, as *C'eſt Dieu qui j'aime*, it is God whom I love. *Vous ſçavez aſſez ce que je deſire*, you know well enough what I deſire; that is, what thing

thing; and so it signifieth being an Interogative, as *Qu'est-ce?* what is it? *qu'y a-il?* what is the matter? *que demandez-vous?* what do you aske for?

Que, is also the conjunction, *That*.

Lequel, being a Relative, is the same as *qui*; as *C'est Dieu qui*, or *lequel m'a assisté*, it is God who or which hath assisted me. But when it is an Interrogative, it is as the Latine *uter*; as *lequel de ces livres est le vostre?* which of these bookes is yours? *Laquelle de ces deux espees vous plaist le plus?* which, or whether of these two Swords doth like you best?

Quel is ever joyned with some Substantive; as *quelle personne vous pourroit endurer?* what person could endure you? *Ie ne sçay quel respect me tient que je ne vous dechasse*, I know not what respect with-holdeth mee, that I chase you not hence.

Quoy sometimes is used absolutely, with a participle; as *Quoy entendu*, which thing understood, or heard; *quoy fait*, which thing being done; *quoy ayant recité*, which having rehearsed: for this we may also say, *ce qu'entendu, ce que fait, ce qu'ayant recité*. 2. It is used also for an interrogative, *Ie vous veux dire quelque chose: quoy?* I will say something to you, what? *& quoy?* and what? *Dequoy avez vous besoing?* what have you need of? *à quoy est bon ceci?* what is this good for? 3. It is used at end of a sentence; as *Ie ne diray*

pas

pas quoy, I will not ſay what; *Il cherche, je ne ſçay quoy*, he ſeeketh I know not what. 4. It is ſometime uſed in admiration; as *Quoy! vous voulez vous perdre?* What! will you undoe your ſelfe? 5. It is ſometime referred to ſome Antecedent, as *voila l'homme de quoy je vous ay parlé*, there is the man whom I ſpake to you of; *C'eſt la fleuve dequoy il eſt fait mention*, it is the River of which mention is made; *le but à quoy je viſe*, the end I aime at. 6. *Dequoy* ſometimes emphatically betokeneth goods, ſubject or matter; as *Cet homme à bien dequoy*, this man hath wherewithall, *Vous me remercie, mais il n'y a pas dequoy*; you thanke me, but there is no cauſe why, or there is nothing for what you ſhould doe it.

Quelque is a meere Adjective, requiring a Subſtantive; *quelque homme*, ſome man, *quelque femme*, ſome woman, *quelque bien*, ſome good.

Quelcun, or *quelqu'un*, is a Subſtantive; *Quelcun vous demande*, ſome body asketh for you; *quelcun de mes amis*, ſome one of my friends,

Que is applied after *qui*, *quel*, *quelle*, *quelque* and *quoy*; as *Ie ſuis preſt d'obeir à vos commandements quels qu'ils ſoyent*: I am ready to obey your commandements, whatſoever they be, or *quels ſoyent-ils*; or *quels qu'il puiſſent, eſtre*, or *quels puiſſent-ils eſtre*, whatſoever they may be; *Il faut ſe contenter chacun de ſa condition quelle qu'elle ſoit*, or *quelle ſoit elle*, each man muſt be content with his condition

tion whatsoever it be; or *quelle qu'elle puisse estre, or quelle puisse-elle estre*, whatsoever it may be: *Il n'est pas licite de murmurer en affliction, quelle-que Dieu l'envoye*, it is not lawfull to murmure in affliction, whatsoever, or howsoever God send it; or *quelle que Dieu la vueille envoyer*, howsoever it please God to send it. *Ie ne vous crain, qui-que vous soyez*, I feare you not whosoever you be; *qui que puissiez estre*, or *qui puissiez vous estre*, whosoever you may be. *Ie ne vous crain point, quelque grand que vous soyez*, I feare you not how great soever you be; *I'obeiray à vos commandemens quelques difficiles qu'ils soyent*, I will obey your commandements how difficult soever they be; Which phrase may also be thus elegantly said; *I'obeiray à vos commandemens pour difficiles qu'ils sayent: Ie me contente de ma condition quelque petite qu'elle soit*, or *pour petite qu'elle soit*, I am content with my condition, how meane soever it be: *L'homme sage ne se desconforte point pour calamité*, or *quelque calamité qui luy adviéne*, a wise man is not discomforted for any calamitie that, or, what calamitie soever doth happen unto him. So *quoy-que vous me faciez*, what thing soever you doe to mee; *quoy que ce soit*, whatsoever, or howsoever it be; *quoy qu'il y ait*, whatsoever there be. Sometimes, *quoy-que* is put for *combien-que*, although; as *quoy-que j'e soye pauvre, toutes-fois j'ayme l'honneur*, though I be poore, yet I love my credite.

Aucun

Aucun is thus uſed; *Ie ne connoy aucun de cette ville*, I know not any of this citie; *avez vous accointance aucune avec ces homme?* have you any acquaintance at all with that man? *Ie doute ſi je trouveray aucun qui me face faveur*, I doubt whether I ſhall finde any to ſhew me favour; *On en voyt aucuns qui n'ont que la piaſe*, we ſee ſome of them, which have nothing but a bragging ſhew.

Chaſque, or *chaque*, is an Adjective; *chaſque homme* each man, *chaque femme* each woman. But *Chaſcun*, or *chacune* is a Subſtantive; *Chacun aime ſon plaiſir*, every one loves his pleaſure: yet it is ſometimes found with a Subſtantive, *Chacun homme doit avoir ſa femme, & chacune femme ſon mari*, each man ought to have his wife, and every wife her husband.

Quiconque thus; *quiconque veut vivre ſainement, vive ſobrement*, he that will live healthfully, let him live ſoberly.

Quelconque, thus: *Ie ne voy raiſon quelconque en voſtre dire*, I ſee no reaſon whatſoever in your ſaying.

Nul hath *Ne* with it; *Nul ne vid oncques Dieu*, no man ever ſaw God; *Ie n'ay commis nulle faute*, I have committed no fault.

Autruy is applyed to perſons, being of the common gender and ſingular number onely: *N'offenſez point autruy*, offend not another man; *L'autruy* is applied to their goods; *Pluſieurs ne*

font

font conſcience de rauir l'autruy, many make no conſcience to take away violently another mans goods.

Meſme is an Adjective; as *La meſme cauſe*, the ſame cauſe: Or elſe it is joyned together with other Pronounes; as *moy-meſme*, my ſelfe; *luy-meſme*, himſelfe.

4. Of the particles Relatives, *y*, *en*, and *dont*.

Y is either a Relative or an Adverb of place; as *Va au marché: bien j'y vay*, goe to market: well, I goe thither. *Vous plaiſt-il eſcrire à Orleans? Ouy, j'eſcriray*, will you write to Orleans? Yes, I will write thither. *Ton maiſtre eſt il au logis? ouy, il y eſt, ou il n'y eſt pas*, is thy Maſter at home? yes, hee is there, or, he is not there. *Ie vay à Londres pour y ſeiourner quelque temps*, I goe to London to ſoiourne there a while. *Vous ne me repouſſerez d'icy, car j'y ſuis devant vous*, you ſhall not thruſt mee hence, for I was here before you. *I'y paſſeray*, I will paſſe by that way. Or it is a Relative of the thing, *Prenez garde à vous; bien, j'y prendray garde*, take heed to your ſelfe; I will take heed to it, or thereto. *I'y mettre ordre*, I will take order for it, or therein. *Vous ſçaurez bien toſt la langue françoiſe, ſi vous y prenez bonne peine*, you will ſoone learne the French tongue, if you take good paines in it: *Vous y eſtudiez ſans ceſſe*, you ſtudie therein without ceaſing.

En, when it is not a Prepoſition, but is ſet afore verbes,

verbes, is a particle. 1. signifying issue from place; *viens-tu de la maison? ouy j'en vien*, comm thou from home? yes, I come from thence. Q *les nouvelles de la Cour? on dit que vous en venez* what newes at Court? they say you come fro thence. 2. Or it is a Relative of the thing, or some portion, or quantitie of a thing; as *On m dit que vous mesdites de moy: sauf vostre grace, j n'en mesdi point*; it is told me, that you speake i of me: no indeed, I speake not ill of you. *No jouons à la prime, en voulez vous estre?* wee play Primero, will you make one with us? *Prestez m de l'argent, si vous en avez*, lend me some money, you have any: *Ie n'en ay point, si j'en avois, je vo en presterois*, I have none, or not any, if I h some, or any, I would lend it you. *Combien ave vous d'enfans? j'en ay assez*, how many childre have you? I have enow, or I have enow of them *I'en ay un*, I have one. *Y-a-il beaucoup d'estrangie en ceste ville? il y en a peu*, is there many strange in this citie? there are few: meaning, of them *Estudiez ces preceptes, mettez peine d'en bien us* study these precepts well, take paines to use the well. *Ie n'en doute point*, I doubt not of it. *Ie vo en advertiray*, I will advertise you thereof. *Il y a de si curieux des affaires d'autruy, que les leurs en meurent*, there bee some so curious of oth mens affaires, that their owne are neglect thereby. 3. Or it is a Relative of the efficient

materia

materiall cause; *S'estant eschauffé, il en est tombé malade*, having over-heated himselfe, he is fallen sicke withall. *Il aime tant la chasse, qu'il en perd le boire & le manger*, he loveth hunting so well, that he loseth his victuals for it, or thereby. *I'ay amassé tous mes materiaux pour en bastir une maison*, I have gathered together all my materials, for to build a house withall. *Plusieurs sont tellement curieux des affaires d'autruy, qu'ils en oublient les leurs*, many are so curious of other mens businesses, that they forget thereby their owne. 4. It is set afore verbs of moving, as *Aller, retourner, venir, fuir, ensuivir, courir*, with one of these *me, te, se, nous, vous*; as *m'en vay*, I goe my way. *Il s'en va*, he goeth his way. *Le mal vient à cheval, & s'en retourne à pied*, mischiefe comes on horse-backe, and goes away on foot. And if *y* and *en* come both before the verb, *en* is set next the verbe; *Ie m'y en vay*, I goe my way thither. 5. After imperatives, both *y* and *en* are set; *Il est temps d'aller au marché, allez-y, & venez-en bien tost*, it is time to goe to market, goe thither, and come againe thence quickly. *Allez vous-y-en*, goe your wayes thither. *Tu as beaucoup d'affaires en charge, songes-y, or prens-en soin*, thou hast many businesses in charge, thinke on them; or take care of them. *Souvenez-vous-en*, remember it, or them. *Y* with *il* is set afore the verb *avoir*, used impersonally, as *il y-aura du danger*, there will be some danger.

Dont,

Dont is ſometimes for *duquel*; *Voila l'homme dont eſt queſtion*, there is the man of whom we ſpeake, or that we ſpeake of, or which is in queſtion. *Vous me parlez de choſes dont je n'ay que faire*, you ſpeake to me of things with which I have nothing to doe, or which I have nothing to do withall. Sometimes it is put for *d'où*; as *Ie ne ſçay dont cela vient*, I know not whence that commeth.

4. *Of Verbes.*

VErbes have ſometimes their Nominative caſe ſet after them, namely, the ſentence beginning with an Adverb, conjunction, or other undeclinable part; *Si parla le Roy à eux*, ſo the King ſpake unto them. *Lors ſe leva Monſieur le Preſident*, then aroſe up my Lord Preſident. *Soudain s'eſment un grand bruit*, ſuddenly aroſe a great noiſe. *Toſt apres viendrent les Ambaſſadeurs*, ſoone after came the Ambaſſadours.

The verb *Savoir* in many tenſes is uſed for *pouvoir*; as, *Ie ne ſçaurois* is very common for *ne puis*, I cannot.

The verbes *Accuſer*, *blaſmer*, *taxer*, *ſoupçonner*, *atteindre*, *convaincre*, and their contraries *Abſoudre*, *affranchir*, *delivrer*, *excuſer*, *acquiter*, *louër*, *priſer* and *eſtimer*, governe the perſon in the Accuſative and the vice or vertue in the Genitive: *Ne blaſme point mon maiſtre d'avarice*, blame not my ma-

covetousnesse. *Il est loué de sa diligence*, hee is praised for his diligence. *Acquittez vous de vostre promesse*, acquit you of your promise.

The Verbes *Acheter, vendre, loer, marchander, coster, priser, estimer, evaluer* and the like, governe the thing and it price in the Accusative case; *I'ay acheté mon cheval dix escus, & l'ay revendu quinze*, I bought my horse for ten crownes, and sold it againe for fifteene. *Cette espee me couste quatre escus*, this sword cost me foure crownes. *Combien, or que faites vous cette ceinture?* how sell you this girdle? *Combien* or *Que vendez vous cette paire de gands?* how sell you this paire of gloves? Yet *Avoir* and *bailler* governe the price with the prepositions *à*, or *pour*; as *I'ay eu ce chapeau à deux*, or *pour deux escus*, I have had this Hat for two crownes. So *Adjuger*, and *livrer*; and sometime also *evaluer* with *à*; *Cet anneau a esté evalué trente escus*, or *à trente escus*, this Ring hath beene valued at thirtie crownes. Sometimes are used these Adverbes; *Cher, cherement, à bon marché, trop, peu*, &c. *On vend le vin trop cher à Paris*, they sell wine too deere at Paris. *Il est ici à meilleur marché*, it is here better cheape. *Que vaut le vin en cette ville?* what is wine worth in this Citie? *Dix escus le tonneau*, tenne crownes the tunne. *C'est trop*, it is too much. *C'est bon marché*, it is good cheape.

Verbes of seeming require a Genitive case, or Accusative; *Il fait du fol*, or *le fol*, he playes the

the foole. *Faire du malade*, or *le malade*, to fain himselfe sicke.

The Verb *Estre*, betokening possession, requires a Dative case; *ce livre est à moy*, this book is mine. *C'est à luy*, it is his. *Ce palais est au Roy*, this Palace is the Kings.

Reciprocall verbes have before them two Pronounes of one person, the first Nominative, the other Dative or Accusative; as *Ie me suis esbahi de ce que vous vous estes retiré de moy, qui m'estois proposé de me comporter en telle sorte en vostre endroit, que vous vous en contenteriez, & nous nous entre-aimerions à jamais*, I mervaile at this, that you have withdrawne your selfe from me, who had purposed in my selfe so to behave my selfe towards you, as you should be well content withall, and that we should mutually love each other for ever. And these have often a passive sense; *Si je ne me trompe vous vous abusez*; if I be not deceived, you are abused, or deceive your selfe. And this passive sense is exceeding frequent in third persons singular and plurall, by the pronoune *Se*; whereby all passive phrases of the third person may be rendred; *L'ami certain se connoist au besoin*, a sure friend is knowne in need. *Les richesses, au temps present, se prisent plus que la vertu*: riches, in these times, are prized more than vertue. *Les bonnes lettres s'acquierent à grand travail*, learning is acquired with great labour. These phrases come, when

the agent is not expressed. Sometimes this construction changeth the sense and signification of the verb; as *I'aime Dieu*, I love God. *Ie m'aime aux champs, je ne m'aime point à la Cour*, I like wel', or I delight to be in the countrie, I like not to be in the Court. *Passer*, to passe: *Se passer de quelque chose*, to be contented to want some thing. *Il se passe à peu de chose*, he can make shift with a small matter; a little serves his turne, who is content with a little. *Garder*, to keepe: *Se garder de quelcun*, to take heed of some body.

In asking a question by reciprocall verbs, the Accusative, or Dative is set before, and the Nominative after the verb; *Te cacheras-tu?* wilt thou hide thy selfe? *Vous tiendrez-vous prest à me secourir?* will you hold you ready to succour mee? *M'attendray-je à vostre promesse?* shall I waite upon your promise?

Imperatives of reciprocalls in the first and second persons have no Nominative expressed, but a Dative or Accusative after them, respecting the person to whom the command is made; *Repentez-vous de vos pechez*, repent you of your sins; *Souvenons-nous de Dieu*, let us remember God. But if another Imperative be annexed to the former by a Copulative, in the latter, the Pronoune is best set before the verb; *Repentez vous & vous convertissez au Seigneur, ou vous asseurez de perir mal heureusment*, repent yee, and turne unto the

Lord, or be assured, yee shall perish miserably.

The third person Imperative hath no difficultie; *Qu'il se tienne en repos*, let him keepe himself in rest. *Qu'ils se gardent de faillir*, let them take heed of failing.

Impersonalls which have *On*, or *lon* for the signe, doe wholly keepe the syntax and use of the verbes they come of: Example of a verb transitive, *On prise assez la vertu, mais on la laisse morfondre*, vertue is praised enough, but men let it languish: Of a reciprocall, *On se passe bien des richesses, pourveu que l'on se contente de mediocrité*, we may well be without riches, if we content our selves with mediocritie: Of a passive, *On n'est pas de tous haï, ni de tous aimé*, one is neither hated of all, or beloved of all.

Impersonalls with *il* for signe, are construed for the most part with a Dative of the person, and a Genitive or Ablative of the thing; *Il ennuye à Monsieur de vostre importunité*, Monsier is greeved with your importunitie. *Il ne luy chaud de vostre dammage*, he cares not for your dammage. *Il vous coustera cher de vostre imprudence*, your want of wit will cost you deare. 2. With *De* before an infinitive; *Il me desplaist de vous importuner*, it displeaseth me to importune you. 3. With *Que* and a verbe indicative or substantive; *Vous faschera-il que je me serve de vos livres?* will you be angry that I use your bookes? These three wayes, are these construed

ued; *Il ennuye, il couſte, il faſche, il deplaiſt, il*
de, il ſoucie, il grieve, il importe, il poiſe, il de-
nge, il cuit, il ſouvient, il ſouffit, il chaud; Que vous
ud-il? what care you? *Il eſchet, il arrive, il*
nt bien, or *mal*. Theſe following of the firſt and
ird ſort, *Il couſte, il pert, il appert, il apparoiſt, Il y-*
; as *il y-va de la vïe*, ones life is in danger, or,
s as much as ones life is worth. *Il y va de voſtre*
neur: or *Il vous y va de l'honneur*, your honour,
credite is like to be loſt. *Qu'y va-il*, what hurt,
nger, or loſſe is there in it? *Il me profite d'eſtu-*
r, or *que j'eſtudie*, it is profitable for mee to ſtu-
e. So *Il duiſt, il nuiſt, il vient à point*, or *à propos,*
ſert, il appertient, il plaiſt, Il faut, il convient, il
ut; as *il vous vaut mieux eſtre pouvre que larron*, or
vaut mieux que ſoyez, &c. it is better for you to
poore than a thiefe; *Il s'enſuit, il reſte, il vous*
ſte de faire, or *il reſte que vous faciez voſtre devoir*,
remaineth for you to doe your dutie: *il ſemble,*
tient à; as *Il tient à vous que n'eſtez ſçavant*, it is
ng of your ſelfe, or the fault, let, or hinderance
in your ſelfe, that you are not learned: *Il ne*
ndra pas a moy que ne gaigniez, there ſhall be no
t for me, or hindrance in me, but that you may
ine: And *Il ne me tient pas d'eſtre marié*, I have
o deſire to marry; *Il ne leur tiendra plus d'aller à*
guerre, they will have no more will to goe to
arre. Some of theſe, and others have a nomi-
tiue after them, which if it bee ſet before it,

would be perſonall; *Il reſte des points d'importa* there reſteth ſome points of importance; *points d'importance reſtent*, ſome points of impo tance doe reſt: So *Il vient, il regne, il ſurvient, provient, il couſte, il part, il ſourd, il naiſt, il meurt, manque, il appert, il apparoiſt, il appartient, il ſort, court, il chet, il eſchet, il tombe, il croiſt, il eſt, il arriv il pleut, il greſle, il ſe commet, il ſe fait, il ſe dit, s'eſcrit, il s'apporte*, &c. *Il pleut, il greſle, il tonne, il e claire*, are alſo abſolute. *Il fait*; as *Il fait bon*, it good; *il fait mauvais*, it is evill, *il fait beau pourmener*, It is faire to walke, or walking; *Il fa dangereux de naviger*, it is dangerous to ſaile, o ſayling; *il fait froid*, it is cold; *il fait chaud* it hot, *il fait ſec* it is drie, *il fait humide*, it is moi *il fait vent*, it is windy, *il fait jour* it is day, *il fa nuit* it is night, &c. The Imperſonall *Il y a* is uſe in three inſtances of quantitie; 1. When th quantitie of a thing is underſtood; as *Combien y il de perils en la vie humaine?* how many perils a there in mans life? *y-a-il beaucoup d'argent en voſ bourſe?* is there much money in your purſe? *Y il de la conſtance en vous?* is there any conſtancie i you? 2. When a quantity of time; as *Combien a-il que vous eſtez en France?* how long have yo beene in France? *Il y a trois mois que j'eſtudie en langue françoiſe:* I have ſtudied three moneths the French tongue. 3. Space, or diſtance of pla as *y a-il loin d'icy à Paris?* is it farre from hence Paris

? *Il y a cinquante lieuës*, it is fiftie leagues. when theſe matters of quantitie are not exſſed, it is needfull to ſupply them by the rela- *En*; as *Il y en a qui ſont envieux de l'heur d'au-*, there are ſome which are envious of other ens happineſſe. *Il eſt*; as *il eſt tard*, it is late; *uelle heure eſt il?* what is it a clocke? And ſome- imes for *il y a*; and that is onely in quantitie ma- eriall, limited by *peu, beaucoup, aſſez, gueres, plus, oins, tant, autant*, and the like; as *Il eſt*, or *il y a ien du vin cette annee*, there is ſtore of wine this eare. *Il eſt*, or *il y a trop de faineans par le monde*, here are too many idle perſons in the world. It uſed alſo in another ſenſe; as *Il me fut hier force patienter*, I was forced yeſterday to have pa- ience.

5. *The difference and uſe of the tenſes definite and undefinite indicative.*

The imperfect tenſe ſetteth before the minde, action (though long agoe) whiles the ſame as in doing, and not yet finiſhed; And ſo is u- ed, 1. When there was ſome interruption or change of the action, whileſt it was doing, ſo hat it was not finiſhed; *Ceſar dreſſoit bien la Rep. omaine, & alloit bien mettre les affaires en bon ordre, il n'enſt eſté aſſaſſiné*, Ceſar reformed well the Ro- ane common-wealth, and proceeded well to the affaires in a good order, if hee had not eene murdred. When we conjoyne two acti-

ons happening both at once and continuin
like, (as before;) *Tandis que vous dormiez, j'eſt*
dois, whileſt you ſlept, I ſtudied: But if the one
of a ſhort, the other of a long continuance,
ſhort is the perfect, and the long the imperfe
Lors que j'arrivay à Paris, le Roy y eſtoit. 3. By r
ſon of this continuative ſenſe, it ſerves to decla
a cuſtomarie aſſiduitie of Action, ordinary an
reiterate; *Eſtant à Paris, j'allois tous les jours*
pourmener en la ſale du Palais, when I was at Paris
I went every day to walke in the Hall of the P
lace. *Vn temps fut que vous faiſiez eſtat de moy*, th
time was that you made account of me.

The perfect tenſe reſpects onely the act fini
ſhed, and not the continuance thereof, whileſt
is a doiug; and of this the French hath two, de
nite and undefinite. The definite inferreth a tim
long agoe paſt, and an act fully finiſhed, limitin
the certaine, fixt, and definite time wherein th
thing was done; as *L'an mille cinq cens quat*
vingts & dix, le Roy obtint victoire de ſes ennemi
gaigna la bataille d'yvri, & peu de temps apres la vil
de Paris ſe mit en ſon obeïſſance, in the yeare 159
the King obtained victorie over his enemie
wanne the battaile of Yvri, and a ſhort time afte
the Citie of Paris was brought under his obedi
ence. *Nous priſmes il y à deux mois, ſix vaiſſeaux ſu*
noſtre ennemy, two moneths agoe wee tooke ſi
ſhips from the enemie. The indefinite ſhewet

to an action finiſhed, but either the time not ſo ended and paſt over, but that there reſts ſome part of the ſame yet to paſſe; or if it bee wholly paſt, yet there is no certaine fixt, and ſet time limited, when the ſaid action was done; Examples of both, 1. *De noſtre ſiecle ſont advenuës choſes memorables*, memorable things have happened in our age. *Cette annee les vignes n'ont gueres rapporté*, this yeare the vines have brought forth but little. *Ces deux derniers mois, j'ay eſtudié en la langue françoiſe*, I have ſtudied theſe two laſt monthes in the French tongue. *à matin j'ay eſté à l'eſgliſe*, I was this morning at Church. *à dix heures j'ay diſné*, I dined at tenne a clocke. And with ſome Adverb of the time preſent, or not long paſt; *Il eſt venu à ceſte heure*, he came now. *Ie me ſuis aujourd'huy trouvé malade*, I felt my ſelfe ſicke to day. 2. *Le Roy a obtenu victoire de ſes ennemis, puis leur a pardonné*, the King hath obtained victorie of his enemies, and after pardoned them. But when the time paſt is ſet downe in generall termes, and without any certaine limitation, or with the Adverbes *Iadis, auparavant, il y a long temps, onques jamais*, and the like, we may indifferently uſe either the definite or indefinite; *Au commencement que je m'appliquay*, or *que je me ſuis appliqué à compoſer cet œuvre*, In the beginning when I applied my ſelfe to compoſe this worke. *Eſtant dernierement à Paris, je vi le Roy*, or *j'ay veu le Roy*, the laſt time I was

at Paris I ſaw the King, &c. But *au temps paſſé, quelque fois, autrefois, pieça* ſeeme better with the indefinite, and when we limite ſome thing by part of our age; *En ma jeuneſſe, Durant mon enfance, moy eſtant aagé de vingt ans, j'ay fait, j'ay dit, j'ay eſcrit*, &c. In my youth, during my childhood, I being 20. yeares old, I did, I ſaid, I wrote, &c. Yet there is no great difference.

So the Imperfect or perfect are indifferently uſed, when the action done is onely expreſt without reſpect to the time of its continuance; *vous harangeaſtes mieux hier en l'aſſemblee où vous fuſtes, que je ne vous vei onques haranguer*; or *vous haranguiez mieux hier en l'aſſemblee ou vous eſtiez, que je ne vous avois jamais oui faire*, you made your Oration yeſterday in the aſſembly, better than ever I heard you make any.

The redoubled tenſes keepe the ſame lawes, as touching the reſpect of the definite or indefinite time, as their preterperfects, whoſe pluperfects they are.

For brevitie, wee omit the uſe of the Tenſes Optative and Subjunctive, as not ſo difficult as the former.

Theſe verbs *Sçavoir, voir, connoiſtre, affermer, reconnoiſtre, appercevoir, conſiderer, regarder, noter, contempler, ouïr, ſentir, toucher, gouſter, taſter, trouver, ſavourer, entendre, juger, ſe ſouvenir, ramentevoir, reciter, raconter, narrer, maintenir, ſouſtenir* for *tenir*,

and other like, which affirme a thing with certainetie, & have *Que* after them, require the Verb following *que*, to be of the Indicative Moode; as *I'ay entendu que vous avez ouï nouvelles de la part de vos amis*, I have heard that you heard newes from your friends. But if the ſpeach be Interrogative, conditionall, or negative, after *que* may bee uſed the Indicative, or Optative indifferently; *Ie ne ſçavois pas que vous eſtiez*, or *fuſſiez de mes parens*, I knew not that you were one of my kinſmen, &c.

Theſe Verbes *Penſer, croire, eſtimer* for *penſer, cuider, tenir, imaginer, douter, ſoupçonner, opiner, avoir opinion, s'eſiouir, eſtre aiſe*, or *joyoux*, or *marri*, or *deſplaiſant, s'ennuyer, s'eſmerveiller, ſ'esbahir, s'eſtonner*, and the like, ſhewing an emotion of minde betwixt aſſurance and vncertaintie, after *Que*, will have verbes of the Indicative or Optative Moodes indifferently; *Il penſe que lon le craint*, or *craigne*, he thinkes that men feare him. But in ſpeaches negative, conditionall and interrogative, the Optative hath better grace; *Soupçonnez-vous que l'on vous vueille mort?* doe you ſuſpect that they wiſh you dead?

Theſe Verbs, *Commander, enjoindre, encharger, conſeiller, ſoigner, ordonner* for *commander, regarder, voir*, and *adviſer* for *prendre garde*; *ſuader, mettre ordre, mettre peine, pourvoir, induire, inſtiguer, avancer, haſter, moyéner, tenir la main, prendre garde, avoir*

ſoin,

ſoin, and other like of impulſion or proviſion of a thing; alſo verbes of willing, permiſſion and neceſſitie, and their contraries; as *vouloir*, *deſirer*, *ſouhaiter*, *entendre*, to intend, *faloir*, *pourchaſſer*, *requerir*, *demander*, *prier*, *inviter*, *ſemondre*, *accorder*, *permettre*, *ſoufrir*, *endurer*, *tolerer*, *conſentir*, and *defendre*, *empeſcher*, *prohiber*, *diſſuader*, *detourner*, *demouvoir*, *divertir*, *retarder*, *craindre*, *apprehender* for *craindre*, *abhorrer*, *refuſer*, *nier*, *ignorer*, *differer*, *reculer*, &c. all theſe with *Que* following them, will have after *que* verbes of the Optative mood, imperfect and pluperfect tenſes; *On vous avoit bien conſeillé que vous pouveuſſiez d'heure à vos affaires*, you were counſelled to provide betimes for your affaires. *Vous plaiſt il que je vous tiéne compagnie?* will it pleaſe you that I keepe you company? *I'ignore que vous puiſſiez faire ce dont vous vous vantez*, I know not whether you can doe that which you boaſt of. *Il deſdaigna que je luy aidaſſe*, hee diſdained that I ſhould helpe him.

All theſe Verbes may alſo elegantly have after them a verb of the infinitive Mood, without *que*; as *Ie veux eſtudier* I will ſtudie. *Vous diſirez ſçavoir la langue Françoiſe*, you deſire to have skill in the French tongue. *Ie penſe l'entendre*, I thinke I underſtand it. And this is when the ſaid infinitive concerneth oneſame perſon, as *Ie veux eſcrire des lettres*, I will write Letters; *vous deſirez apprendre*, you deſire to learne. Or elſe, when a perſonall

Pronoune

pronoune is set before the first verb; *Ie vous prie-ray d'aimer la vertu*, I intreat you to love vertue. Of this sort are the verbes following: *Ie veux, je cuide, je pense, je croy, j'ose, je doy, je puis, il faut, je sçay, j'estime, j'imagine, je semble, je vay, j'oy, je voy, je sen, j'apperçoy, je connoy, j'enten* for *j'oy, je remarque, je note, je considere, je contemple, je laisse, je soufre, j'endure, je permets.*

These Verbs require an infinitive with *de* afore it; *Ie crain, j'empesche, je deffen, probibe, dissuade, destourne, retarde, destourbe, diverti, recule, refuse, differe, permets*, with a Dative of the person; also *Ie m'esjouïs, je me fasche, ennuye, Esmerveille, Esbabi, estonne, soucie, lasse*; also *je commande, enjeins, ordonne, suade, haste, instigue, éncharge, conseille, avance, accorde, entrepren*; And *Ie m'atten, vante, diligente, despesche*; and *I'engarde, meus, esmeus, occasionne, presse, approche, éxcuse, dispense, il suffit, il reste, il me déplaist*, and many other impersonalls; as *I'ay crain d'importuner mes amis*, I feare to importune my friends, *Vous m'avez empeschè de faire mon profit*, you hinder me from making my profit. *Ie m'esjouis d'apprendre*, I rejoyce to learne.

Also Infinitives have *de* afore them, when they follow Substantives or Adjectives expressing the moving, or materiall cause; as *Soingneux d'estudier*, carefull to studie. *Content de faire plaisir*, content to doe pleasure. *Las de courir*, weary with running. *enroüe de prier*, hoarse with praying,

envie

envie d'apprendre, desire of learning. *Loisir d'escr*
leasure of writing; and others, where the Latin
use the Gerund in *di*.

These verbes require an infinitive with *à* afo
it; *I'appren, j'appreste, j'estudie, enseigne, indui, esmo
instrui, incite, condui, adresse, appareille, tends, occup
embesongne, redui, atten, prepare, exerce, pourchass
parvien, pousse, enten* for *pren garde, poursui, attem
nui, adonne, incline, panche, amuse, employe, applicque
acharne, obstine, opiniastre, façonne, accommode, ap
propric, adextre, habilite, adapte, dedie, destine, con
sacre, voue, abandonne, expose, commence*; *I'appren
parler françois*, I learne to speake French. *Vous ap
prestez-vous à partir?* doe you make your self
ready to depart? To conclude, all Verbes and
Nownes signifying profite or disprofite, hurting
pleasure, or belonging to any thing, require a
infinitive with *à*; as *diligent à chercher son profi*
diligent in seeking his profite. *Facile* or *difficile*
apprendre, easie or hard to learne. *Plaisant à ouir*
pleasant to heare. *Prompt à secourir*, readie to suc
cour. And where the Latine useth the Gerund
in *do*, or the Prepolition *ad*; *Passer le temps à estu
dier*, to passe his time in study. *Prendre plaisir*
joüer, to take pleasure in playing. Or when th
Latines use the Participle in *Dus*; as *une maison*
loër, a house to let. *Vne fille à marier*, a maiden to
be maried. *Ce qui est fait n'est pas à faire*, tha
which is done is not to doe. And so after *j'a*

importing

importing either need; as *Qu'avez vous à faire?* what have you to doe? *j'ay à estudier* I have to study. *à escrire* to write: Or command, *Le Capitaine t'escria que tous eussent à le suivre, & que nul n'eust à se feindre*, the Captaine cried out that they all should follow him, and that none should spare himselfe: Or the finall cause, *Bailler ses souliers à refaire*, to give his shooes to be mended; *un livre à relier*, a booke to be bound, *Prendre une terre à labourer*, to take a land to husband, or till. *Vne vigne à marrer*, a Vineyard to dresse. *un jardin à façonner*, a Garden to dresse.

Some verbes require an infinitive either without a preposition, or with *De*; as *je delibere apprendre*, or *d'apprendre*, I purpose to learne. *Ie desire sçavoir* or *de sçavoir*, I desire to know; so *I'espere*; *je promets, permets, pretens, I'enten* I intend, *je prie, Souhaite, requier, demande, souffre, endure, imagine, asseure, pleuvie, garanti, daigne, dédaigne, crain.*

Some, either with *de* or *à*; *I'essaye de* or *à faire mon profit*, I trie to make my profit; so *Ie m'effoce, esvertue, peine, travaille, incommode, tasche, commande, refuse, recule, differe, semonds, invite, convie, poursui, pourchasse, attente, solicite, instigue, meus, esmeus, pousse*, and *Ie regarde, advise, pense* for *soigner*, and *prendre garde*; *I'oblige, j'engage, condamne, congedie, facilite, delecte, esbats, resjouis.* Other verbes there are which may have infinitives after them all three wayes in one sense; as *Ie contrain, requier, demande,*

demande, souhaite, desire, resous, delibere, entrepre, j'abhorre, refuse, desdaigne, apprehende, mesprise, abomine. And some, all three wayes in a divers sense; *I'enten parler*, I understand or heare speake: *I'enten de parler* I meane of speaking, or I intend to speake: *je m'enten à parler*, I minde to speake, I heare my selfe speake. *Ie vien escrire*, I come to write. *Ie vien d'escrire*, I come from writing: *Ie vien à escrire*, I come for to write, &c.

An Infinitive active hath a passive sense, when it followeth the verb *Faire*; or these verbes of senses, *Voir, ouïr, sentir, entendre, appercevoir, regarder*; also *Laisser, permettre, endurer, souffrir*; as *Ie feray imprimer mon livre*, I will cause my booke to be printed. *Ie le vei mettre en prison*, I saw him put in prison. *Ie vous feray battre*; I will make you be beaten. *I'oy chanter une chanson*, I heare a song sung.

The verb *Faire* with *Ne* afore it, and *Que* after it, with *de* before an Infinitive, inferreth a thing to be but newly done; *Ie ne fay que d'arriver*, I doe but now arrive; or I am but newly arrived. *Il ne faït que de sortir*, he doth but now come forth, or he is new gone forth. But in the same phrases, if the Infinitive have not *de* afore it, it importeth a continuance without ceasing; *Vous ne faites qu'estudier*, you doe nothing but studie.

The Infinitive not depending on another verbe, wee use to signifie a sudden hastinesse of action;

tion; *Nous chargeons bruſquement l'ennemi, & luy de reculer, & nous de le pourſuivre*, wee furiouſly charge the enemy, and ſuddenly he flyes backe, & we as ſwiftly purſue him. *Il eſtoit yvre & ſe laiſſe tomber, & chacun de rire*, he was drunken and fell downe, and preſently each man fell alaughing. Where you ſee *Et* and *De* (with a Nominative between) ſet afore that infinitive.

Pour and *à fin de* are ſet afore infinitives to declare the finall cauſe, and in anſwer to a queſtion made by *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin*; as *Pourquoy eſtez vous venu en France? pour apprendre la langue*, wherefore came you into France? to learne the language; or *à fin d'apprendre*, that I might learne. *Pourquoy*, or *à quelle fin portez vous l'eſpee? pour*, or *à fin de me deffendre au beſoin*, wherefore, or to what end doe you weare a ſword? for to defend, or that I may defend, or to the end I may defend my ſelfe when need ſhall be.

Infinitives are very often uſed for Nounes ſubſtantives in the ſingular number; *Couchez voſtre dire par eſcrit*, ſet downe your ſaying in writing. *Ne vous arreſtez au parler du monde*, ſtand not upon the ſpeach of the world. *Tout mon pouvoir ne ſçauroit acquiter mon devoir envers vous*, all my power, or all that I can doe, cannot acquit mee of my duty towards you. And ſo with ſome prepoſitions, eſpecially *ſans*, it is expreſſed in Engliſh by the Participle active in *ing*; as *Par bien*

ſervir & loyal eſtre, de ſerviteur on devient maiſtre, by ſerving well and being faithfull, of a ſervant one becomes a maſter. *Vous me haïſſez ſans vous avoir fait deſplaiſir*, you hate me without having done you diſpleaſure: *Sans cultiver & enſemencer, la terre ne produit que ronces & chardons, auſſi ſans endoctriner les eſprits, ils ne foiſonnent qu'en vices*, without tilling and ſowing, the earth bringeth forth but briers and thiſtles, ſo alſo without inſtructing the mindes, they onely fructifie in vices. So with *Pour*; *Il fut decapité pour avoir trahi le chaſteau*, he was beheaded for having betrayed the Caſtle. Alſo with *Trop*; *Trop parler nuit, trop grater cuit*, too much ſcratching cauſeth ſmart, and too much ſpeaking hurteth. Further, the imperfect tenſe infinitive *Avoir* is uſed with the prepoſition *apres* afore it; as *Apres avoir leu vos Lettres*, after I had read your Letters. *Apres avoir conſtainment attendu*, after he had conſtantly waited. *Apres avoir aſſez connu voſtre intention*, after I had ſufficiently knowne your intention.

5. *Of Participles.*

A Participle of the preſent tenſe in *ant*, is joyned to all numbers and perſons of the verbe *Avoir*, ſo ſignifying a continuance of action; as *I'allois racontant mes douleurs*, I went rehearſing my ſorrowes, *Pluſieurs ennemis me vont rongeant*, or *rongeans*; many enemies goe conſuming me.

This

This remayning a meere Participle, is not tied to follow the Gender of the ſubſtantive, but in the Maſculine forme (being of the common gender) ſeemes to goe more fluently: *La roſee tombant du ciel enfeconde la terre*, the dewe falling from heaven makes the earth fruitfull. *Les femmes ſe fardans rendent ſuſpecte leur pudicité*, women that paint themſelves, make their chaſtitie bee ſuſpected. Yet in the plurall number, it may follow the ſubſtantive; *Les vertus reiglantes la vie humaine ſont bien ſeantes*, the vertues ruling mans life are well beſeeming: which may be ſaid alſo, *Les vertus qui reiglent*, &c. And when this Participle is onely uſed adjectively, it muſt agree with it ſubſtantive; *C'eſt une vertu bien ſeante que la modeſtie*, modeſtie is a well-beſeeming vertue. It is a meere Participle, when it attributes an action, or effect comming from the ſubſtantive: It is meerely an adjective, when it attributes a qualitie adherent.

In like ſort, the participle paſſive, ſerving for an adjective, muſt agree with it ſubſtantive; *Vn royaume diviſé ne ſubſiſtera point, & la cité deſunie ſera deſolee*, a kingdome divided will not ſubſiſt, and a Citie diſunited will be deſolate. Thus alſo with all verbes having *Ie ſuis* for auxiliar. But being joyned to the auxiliare active, to forme the compound tenſes, the uſe is more difficult, and therefore we muſt obſerve theſe rules. 1. In ſpea-

king by verbes actives tranſitives with an accuſative caſe, if the participle common goe before the accuſative (which is the ſubſtantive upon which it worketh) it is not tied to gender, nor to number, but is pronounced as maſculine ſingular; *I'ay enhui appris une belle leçon*, I have learned to day a faire leſſon. *Vn tel m'a dit des nouvelles de noſtre païs*, ſuch a one hath told me ſome newes of our countrie. And the imperſonall compoſed of the particle *On*, and of the verbe active, hath the ſame conſtruction.

2. But if the ſaid Participle comes after his ſubſtantive patient, on which it worketh, and is referred to it by meanes of a Relative or Pronoune accuſative comming betweene, then muſt it agree with it in gender and number; *I'ay receu les livres que j'avois achetez*, I have receaved the bookes that I had bought. *Vous ſouvienne de ceſte leçon que vous avez ouïë*, remember this leſſon which you have heard. The ſame alſo when the ſubſtantive is not expreſſed, but underſtood; as ſpeaking to a woman; *Qui vous à conduite venant icy?* who brought you hither when you came? *Il m'y a amenee*, he brought me thither. And here falleth out two obſervations: the firſt, when this participle is not referred, to an accuſative, but to a dative caſe, then it doth not agree with it, but remaineth ſingular, or neuter; as ſpeaking of women, *Ie leur ay obeï de bon cœur*, I have obeyed them

them with a good heart. *Ie leur ay ſervi*, I have ſerved them. *Elles m'ont pleu pour leur vertu & honneſteté*. The ſecond is, that although it be referred to an Accuſative; yet if there follow it ſome infinitive, it may indifferently either agree with it accuſative, or remaine ſingular and maſculine; as *Avez-vous veu la Roine? Ouy, Ie l'ay veu parler*, or *je l'ay veuë parler à Monſieur L'Ambaſſadeur*; ſaw you the Queene? yes, I ſaw her ſpeake to my Lord Embaſſadour. *Avoit-il desja fait ſa harangue? non, mais je la luy ay oui prononcer*, or *je la luy ay ouïe prononcer*; had he already done his oration? no, but I heard him pronounce it.

3. When this participle is uſed with the paſſive auxiliare *Ie ſuis*, it muſt (as wee have above noted) agree with it ſubſtantive nominative, (and not accuſative) whether it goe afore or after; as *De noſtre temps ſont advenuës, choſes memorables*, in our time memorable things are come to paſſe. *Les Gaules furent jadis conquiſes par Ceſar*, the Gaules were long agoe conquered by Ceſar. *Rendues que furent les lettres de Ceſar aux Conſuls*, Ceſars letters being delivered to the Conſuls.

4. The auxiliar participles *Ayant, ayans, eſtant, eſtans*, are never uſed in the feminine forme (to ſay *Ayante, eſtante*, &c.) but are ever of the common gender: and ſo *Eſté* varieth not at all; for we never ſay *Eſtee*, nor *Eſtez*.

Our Participles of active termination, are

ſometimes uſed for ſubſtantives maſculine; as *Le Croiſſant*, the halfe Moone. *Le levant* the riſing. *Le couchant* the ſetting. *Le trenchant* the edge. *Le courrant de l'eau*, the running courſe, or ſtream of the water. *Le pendant d'une eſpee*, a ſword-hanger; &c.

Alſo the Participles paſſive, or preterite, being made feminines, doe oftentimes ſerve for feminine Noune ſubſtantives verballs; as *Allee, Arrivee, Entree, Sortie, Couvee, Iſſuë, venuë, Departie, Venuë, Saillie, Cruë, Aſſemblee, Priſe, Entrepriſe, Miſe, Entremiſe, Montee, Devalee, Crainte, Contrainte, Portee*, &c.

The Syntax of Adverbs, Conjunctions, and Propoſitions.

Tant, and *Autant*, when they import a ſimple quantitie, without compariſon, have *Que* (not *Tuant*) for their redditive, and the ſpeach being wholly affirmative, we may uſe them indifferently; as *I'ay receu du Roy tant de faveurs que j'ay voulu*, or *autant de faveurs*, &c. I have receaved from the King ſo many, or as many favours, as I deſired. But if after *Que* the ſpeach bee negative, then muſt *tant* onely, and not *autant* bee uſed, as *I'ay tant receu de biens de Dieu, que je ne les ſçaurois nombrer*, I have receaved ſo many good things from God, that I cannot number them.

Plus and *Moins* have *De* after them; as *Craſſus avoit plus de richeſſe que Caton, mais moins d'honneur*,

ssus had more riches than Cato, but lesse hon-
our.

Si and *aussi* are used afore Adjectives and Ad-
rbs, but *Si* more elegantly; and *Tant* and *Au-*
nt also afore Substantives, but *tant* more ele-
antly: *Ie ne suis si riche que vous*, I am not so
ich as you; *I'ay autant d'honneur en ma vie qu'au-*
cun autre, I have as much reputation in my life as
ny other. So *Si beau* so faire, *si bon* so good, *si*
gement so wisely, *si promptement* so readily: but
we may not say, *Il est si mon ami*, or *il a si joüé*, but
Il est tant mon ami que rien plus, hee is so much my
friend, as nothing can be more: *Il a tant joüé à la*
paume qu'il en est malade, he hath plaid so much at
Tennis, that he is sicke of it.

Si doth sometime (applied to contradict a
speach afore-going) signifie Yet; *Vous me voulez*
mal, si ne vous fis-je jamais tort, or *si est-ce que je ne*
vous fis jamais tort, you wish me ill, yet I never
did you wrong.

Nenni is used in answer, absolutely: *voulez-*
vous venir? nenni, will you come? no.

Non is either set afore Nounes, Pronounes,
Adverbs and Participles, which are meerely Ad-
jectives; *Ie suis ici venu, non afin de passer inutile-*
ment mon temps, mais pour apprendre, I am come
hither, not to passe away my time unprofitably,
but for to learne; And it must not bee set afore
verbes, or participles governing a case after
them,

them, for then muſt *Ne* be uſed, *Ie ne ſuis pas venu pour perdre le temps*, I am not come for to loſe time. Or abſolutely, or in Negative anſwers made by one of theſe verbes *faire, avoir, eſtre, ſçavoir, vouloir*, as *Dites moy voſtre nom : Non feray*, tell me your name, I will not. *Voila voſtre hoſte : non eſt*, here is your hoſt : it is not. *Avez vous eſté à Genes ? Non*, have you beene at Genoa? no. It is ſometime alſo uſed with *point* ; as *Ie vous donne cela, non point pour m'acquiter des obligations que je vous ay, mais pour teſmoignage du ſouvenir que j'ay de vous*, This I give you, not to acquit me of the bond of kindneſſe that I owe you, but to teſtifie my remembrance of you.

Pas and *Point* doe but fill up a negation, and doe differ very little: *point* agrees beſt to things bearing quantitie, *Ie n'ay point d'argent*, I have no money ; *point de puiſſance, point d'eſprit*, no power, no wit ; And it is often uſed abſolutely in anſwers. *Pas* ſerveth for a ſimple denying or of qualitie, but never abſolutely as *point*. Theſe two are ſometimes omitted ; namely, 1. In conditionall ſpeaches, expreſſed by the Latine *Niſi* afore a verb, *Si je ne vous aimois*, if I did not love you ; *Si vous ne m'eſtiez cher, je n'aurois tel ſoin de vous*, if you were not deare unto me, I would not have ſuch a care of you. 2. In ſpeaches, where *Ne* followeth the Relatives *Qui, que, lequel, dont*, in Latine expreſſed by *Quin*, or *qui non* : *Ie ne vi jamais perſonne*,

personne, qui ne fust bien aise d'estre loué, I never saw any which was not glad to be praised; *à qui on ne face plaisir de le louër*, but tooke a pleasure to bee commended. *Il n'y a homme qui ne peche*, there is no man but sinneth, or which sinneth not. *Il ne fait rien, dont il ne se repente*, hee doth nothing but he repents him of it, or which he doth not repent him of, or of which hee doth not repent himselfe, 3. In asking a question, with *que ne*; as *Que ne faites vous vostre devoir?* why doe you not your dutie? *Que n'estudiez vous?* why doe you not studie? 4. In speaches containing some hindrance, or forewarning against inconvenience; as *Sauvez-vous que lon ne vous empoigne*, save you, that you be not laid hands on. *Guardez que ne soyez descouvert*, take heed you be not discovered. 5. When we use the verb *Sçavoir* for *pouvoir*, as *Ie ne sçauroy veiller*, I cannot watch. 6. Lastly, when one of these are used to fill up the negation, *Rien, jamais, nul, nullement, personne, aucun, gueres, onc, quelconque*; as *Ie ne demande rien*, I aske nothing *Ie ne vous connu onc*, I never knew you. *Nul ne peut servir à deux maistres*, no man can serve two masters. *Il n'a gueres de soin*, he hath not much care, or but little care. *Il n'y a personne*, there is no body.

Also note, that when *Que* commeth afore *Ne*, without *point, pas*, or any of the above-said, then it loseth its negative force; as *Il est plus sçavant*

que

que ne ſont ſes compagnons, he is more learned than are his fellowes. Or after *Ne*; as *Ie ne connoy que vous en cette ville*, I know none but you in this towne.

Alſo note, that *jamais* (without *Ne*) having *à*, or *pour* afore it, ſignifieth Ever: and that both it and *Rien*, with ſome of the others, may be alſo uſed abſolutely (without *ne*) for negatives; as *Cela eſt moins que rien*, that is leſſe than nothing.

Que ne, and *De peur que* are thus uſed: *Ne faites mal à perſonne que mal ne vous en prenne*, doe evill to no man, that evill come not to you for it; or leſt, &c. or *De peur que mal ne vous en adviene*, for feare leſt evill happen unto you. But if wee ſay, *De peur que mal ne vous en prenne pas*, the Engliſh is, For feare leſt evill come not unto you.

Theſe prepoſitions will have Genitive caſes after them with *de, du, des*: *Arriere, aupres, au long, au prix, prés, à l'environ, aux environs, autour, à l'entour, au travers, à travers, à l'eſgard, au regard, à l'encontre, le long, au rebours, aux entours, à rebours, à l'endroit, loing, au loing, au devant, au derriere, au dehors, au dedans, au deſſus, au deſſous, au deça, au delà, vis à vis*, &c.

Theſe *Iuſque, juſques*, and *en eſgard* require a Dative, with *à, au, à l', aux*.

En, being ſet afore a Noune, without an article between, may ſometime ſignifie the Latine *Inſtar*; as *parler en ſage perſonnage*, to ſpeak like a wiſe man.

are unenglished in the Grammar.

Age, age.
abandoner, to forſake, or give over.
abaiſer, to abaſe, depreſſe.
abbatre, to beate downe.
abbé, an Abbot.
abhorrer, to abhorre.
abborder, to arrive.
abiſme, a bottomleſſe pit.
abnegation, a denyall.
abontir, to waxe ripe, to end, &c.
abreger, to ſhorten, or abbreviate.
abſence, abſence.
abſtenir, to abſtaine.
abricot, an Apricocke.
abſouldre, to abſolve.
abſynthe, wormewoode.
accés, or *accez*, an acceſſe, a fit of.
accident, an accident.
accepter, to accept.
accourir, to run unto.
acconſuivre, to overtake.
Accommoder, to accommodate.
accorder, to accord, or agree unto.
accoſter, to drawe neere to.
accroche, a hooke, claſp.
accroſtiche, acroſticke.
accueillir, to entertaine.
accueil, entertainment.
acharner, to fleſh.
acier, ſteele.
acquiter, to acquit.
acquerir, to get, to acquire.
accroire, as *faire accroire*, to make to beleeve, to truſt.
accroiſtre, to encreaſe.
accuſer, to accuſe.
acte, *action*, an action, act.
acre, ſharpe, tarte, eger.
achetter, to buy.
adapter, to fit unto, to adapt.

addreſſer,

Addreſſer, to direct unto.
S'addonner, to give himſelfe unto.
adextrer, to make fitte, quicke.
adjection, an adding to.
adjuger, to adjudge.
admettre, to admit.
Admiral, an Admirall.
admirer, to admire.
adminiſtrer, to adminiſter.
adoption, adoption.
adoucir, to ſweeten, to aſſwage.
Il advient, it happeneth.
adviſer; to adviſe, bethinke.
advancer, to ſet forward, to advance.
adverbe, an adverbe.
adverſité, adverſitie.
adverſaire, an adverſarie.
adultere, F. adultery, an adulterer, *M.*
advocat, an Advocate, a Counſeller. *advocaceau*, a petty advocate.

Affable, affable, curte
afadir, to make, or gr unſavorie.
affection, affection.
affaire, buſineſſe.
affermir, to make firm eſtabliſh.
affirmer, to affirme.
affoiblir, to make feeble to weaken.
affranchir, to make free to free.
agreer, to bee to ones liking.
agrandir, to make great or waxe great.
agreſlir, to make ſlender, or to grow ſlender, or ſmall.
ahan, the crie of one that ſore laboureth.
ahanner, to take great paines.
aigre, ſowre, tart.
aimable, amiable, lovely.
aigrir, to ſharpen; exaſperate.
ajeunir, to make young, wax young.

Aigu,

..., ſharpe.
...le, an Egle.
...ſe, eaſe, full content; glad.
...de, helpe, aide.
...l, garlicke.
...ſter, to give ſucke to.
...aigre, chearefull.
...rme, an alarum.
...entir, to relent, ſlacken, be appeaſed.
...ger, to eaſe.
...ee, a going, a gate, paſe, allie.
Allemaigne, Germanie.
...liter, to goe ſicke to bed, lie bed-rid.
...nger, to lengthen, make long.
...xitere, a preſervative againſt poyſon.
...phabeth, an A.B.C.
...maigrir, to make leane, or to wax leane.
...mbre, Amber.
...me, the ſoule.
...mbuſcade, an ambuſcado.
...bition, ambition.
Ami, a friend.
amitié, friendſhip.
amender, to amend.
amenuiſer, to leſſen, grow leſſe.
amour, love.
amollir, to ſoften, to mollifie.
amoindrir, to leſſen; wax leſſe.
amoitir, to moiſten: wax moiſt.
amuſer, to amuſe; to put, or to bee in a dump.
Anagramme, an Anagram.
anceſtres, Anceſters.
ancre, an anker.
annaliſte, a Chronicler.
ange, an Angel.
anglois, Engliſh; an Engliſh man.
aneantir, to annihilate, to diſannull, bring to nothing.
angle, a corner, an angle.
anonchalir, to make careleſſe

careleſſe or negligent; or waxe ſo.

Antimoine, antimonie.

Antre, a cave, a denne.

s'annuiſter, to waxe night.

antique, ancient antick.

apparence, ſhew appearance.

apetiſſer, to make little.

apauvrir, to make poore, to wax poore.

apeſantir, to make heavie, to wax heavie.

appareiller, to prepare, or make ready.

appartenir, to pertaine, or belong. *Il appartient*, it belongeth.

il Appert, *il apparoiſt*, it appeareth.

il s'Apperçoit, it is perceaved.

il s'apporte, it is brought.

apophthegme, an Apophthegme.

apoſter, to ſuborne.

apoſtre, an Apoſtle.

apoſtolique, Apoſtolicall.

Apoſtume, an Inſtume.

appliquer, to apply.

apprendre, to learne.

appreſter, to make rea

approcher, to draw nee

approprier, to appropr ate.

appuy, a prop.

arbre, a tree.

arbriſſeau, a ſhrub.

architecte, an Architec or overſeer for bu ding.

arbitre, an arbitrer.

archier, an Archer. *A cher.*

archerot, a little Arche

archange, an Archange

arch'eveſché, an Archb ſhopricke.

arme, a weapon.

arriver, to arrive, com

Il Arrive, there co meth.

arrivee, an arrivall.

artiſte, an Artiſt.

aſne an Aſſe.

aſnon, a little aſſe, aſſ-fo

Aſperge

Asperges, sperage.
Asperger, to sprinkle.
Aspre, sharp, tart, harsh.
Astres, the starres.
Assemblee, an assemblie.
Asseurer, to assure.
Asseoir, *asseoir*, to set, sit, settle.
Astraindre, to binde fast, to constraine.
Atteindre, to reach unto. to attaine.
Attester, to affirme, testifie.
Atheiste, an atheist.
Attenter, to attempt.
Attendre, to attend, expect, waite for.
Ie m'attend, I trust to, rely upon.
Attraire, to attract, draw to.
Attraict, attracted, drawne.
Avare, covetous.
Aveugle, blinde.
Audience, audience.
Auditoire, an auditorie.
Avancer, see *Advancer*.
Avenir, to happen.
Aveindre, to draw out, bring forth.
Autheur, an author.
Aprivoiser, to tame.
Arondir, to make round.
Asprir, to sharpen, exasperate.
Atiedir, to waxe lukewarme, or to make so.
Attendrir, to make tender, or to grow tender.
Assagir, to make wise.
Assecher, to drie up.
Avachir, to faile, grow heartlesse.
Augmenter, to encrease.
Axiome, an Axiome.
Ayeul, a grandfather.
Babil, babbling, prattle.
Bail, a gardian.
Bailler, to give.
Baler, to dance.
Balier, to sweepe.
Bale, a bullet, a ball, a packe.
Balafre, a slash over the face.

Baiſſer, to bow downe, ſtoope.
bande, a ſwathband, fillet, &c.
bander, to binde, ſwaddle.
baptiſer, to baptiſe.
baptiſme, baptiſme.
baptiſtere, a Font.
baril, a barell.
bas, low.
Baſle, the citie Baſil.
Baſque, a Biſcayne.
baſter, to put on packe-ſaddle.
Baſtille, a Fortreſſe.
baſtion, a fortification ſo called.
baſton, a ſtaffe.
baſtonnade.
bave, ſome, ſlaver, drivel.
baulme, or *baume*, balme.
beauté, beautie.
beſoing, need.
beſte, a beaſt.
beſtiole, *beſtelette*, a little beaſt.
beſtail, cattell.
Beſtialiaté, beaſtlineſſe.
beau, *belle*, faire.
benin, *benigne*, gen[tle] meeke.
beliſtre, a rogue, begg[ar].
bec, the bill of a bird.
benefice, a benefite.
begue, fumbling in ſpeach.
beurre, butter.
bible, the Bible.
biévre, a Beaver.
bigle, *bicle*, ſquint-eyed.
bis, browne, courſe.
birraſque, a tempeſt of whirlewinde at ſea.
biſcaye, a vantage at Tennis.
biſcuit, bisket.
bitume, bitumen.
blanc, white.
blanchet, *blanchelet*, ſomewhat white.
blanchir, to whiten.
blaſme, blame.
blaſmer, to blame.
blaſpheme, blaſphemie.
blaſphemer, to blaſpheme.
bleſme, pale, wanne.

Blondir,

blondir, to waxe yellow.
boisson, drinke.
bonace, *bonasse*, a calme.
bon, good.
bonté, goodnesse.
bord, a welt, hem.
bosquet, a thicket, grove.
borgne, one-eyed.
boucle, a buckle.
bourde, a jeast.
bourgeois, a Burgesse.
bouger, to stirre, budge.
bransler, to totter, shake.
bransle, a totter, shake, dance.
brave, brave, braggard.
brief, brief, short.
brebis, a sheepe.
brouiller, to disorder.
brun, browne.
bruneau, *brunelet*, somewhat browne.
brunir, to bee browne, obscure.
brusler, to burne.
brusque, briske, lively, also rash, rude.
bufle, a buffle.
buffet, a court-cupboord.
Busquer, to shift, filch.
Caban, a felt cloake.
cable, a Cable.
cage, a cage.
cane, a Ducke.
cagnot, a little dog.
canal, a channell.
cantique, a song.
camerade, a camerade.
camp, a camp.
cameriste, a chamber-fel-fellow.
cancre, a crab-fish.
capriole, a Caper.
caprice, a humour, caprichio.
capricorne, capricorne.
carme, a verse.
casque, a Caske, a head-peece.
casaque, a cassocke.
catalogue, a Catalogue.
catechisme, a catechisme.
cataplasme, a cataplasme.
catharre, a Rheume.
cavallot, a little horse.
caviller, to cavill.
cause, a cause.
caustique, caustick.

Cedule, a Cedule.
circle, a circle.
Caille, a quaile.
cerne, circle.
celuy, hee.
ceux, them.
cetuy, this man, he.
cendre, ashes.
centre, the center of a circle.
chair, flesh.
celeste, heavenly.
celebre, famous.
centuple, an hundred fold.
cercueil, a coffin.
certain, certaine.
champs, fields, countrie.
change, change.
chambre, a chamber.
chancre, a canker, cancer.
chanvre, hempe.
chapitre, a chapter.
charactere, a character.
chaste, chaste.
chastité, chastitie.
chasteau, a Castle.
chastelet, a little castle.
Chat, a Cat.
chaton, a young Catling.
charme, a charme.
chaussee, a Cauley.
changer, to change.
charger, to charge, to load.
chanzir, to be muckie.
il chaut, *chaloir*, to care for.
chef, a head, chiefe.
chemin, the way.
il chet, see *cheoir*, or *choir*.
cheval, a horse.
chevestre, a halter, headstall.
chemise, a shirt, or smock.
chien, a dog.
Chirurgien, a Chirurgian.
chiche, niggard.
chose, a thing.
cholere, *colere*, choller.
chorde, a cord.
chiquenaude, a fillip.
chifre, a cipher.
choir, to fall, *cheoir*.
chresme, creame, a crisom.

Chrestien,

Chreſtien, a Chriſtian.
cichoree, hearb Succorie.
cierge, a big waxe candle.
ciſeaux, a paire of lizzers.
cime, the top.
cigne, a Swan.
cire, wax.
cimetiere, a Church-yard.
cimeterre, a ſemitar.
ciboire, a Pix.
cidre, Sider.
ciſtre, *ſiſtre*, a braſſe Timbrell.
ciel, heavens.
citron, a Citron.
cieulx, heaven.
ciſterne, a Ceſterne.
circonſtance, circumſtance.
cil, the haire of the eyelidde.
clou, a naile.
clef, a key.
clerc, a Clerke, Clergiman.
clergeon, a petrie clerke.
Cleiſtre, a Cloiſter.
client, a Client.
cliſtere, a Cliſter.
clos, cloſe, cloſed, ſhut.
cloiſon, an hedge-pale, or rayle incloſing.
cœur, a heart.
coife, a Coife.
col, the necke.
coing, a wedge, a quince, alſo a corner or angle.
coffre, a coffer, a Cheſt.
coche, a Coach, a ſowpig.
colle, glue.
colloque, a conference.
cocq, a Cocke.
combatre, to fight.
comble, fulneſſe.
comete, a Comet.
commander, to command.
commencer, to begin.
commerce, Commerce.
compartir, to divide.
commettre, to commit.
complaire, to pleaſe.
comprendre, to comprehend.

Complexion, complexion.
compagnie, companie.
compagnon, a fellow,
compter, to reckon, accompt.
complot, a complot.
comte, an Earle.
cognoiſte, or *connoiſtre*, to know.
concombre, a Cowcumber.
condamner, to condemn.
congedier, to licence to depart, to give leave to depart.
comté, a Countie, Earledome.
congé, leave.
concierge, a laylor.
Il ſe commet, there is committed.
confondre, to confound.
condeſcendre, to condeſcend.
concevoir, to conceave.
condoloir, to condole.
conclave, a conclave, cloſet.
Congre, a Conger fiſh.
conquerir, to conquer.
conſeiller, to counſell.
conſentir, to conſent.
conduire, to conduct.
conjecturer, to gueſſe.
conjecture, conjecture.
conſiderer, to conſider.
conſacrer, to conſecrate.
conſiſtoire, a conſiſtorie.
conſtruire, to build.
conſtant, conſtant.
contagion, infection.
contenir, to containe.
contraindre, to conſtrain.
contempler, to behold.
contreſcarpe, a counterſcarſe.
contraire, contrarie.
contr'oppoſer, to oppoſe againſt.
contrainte, conſtraint.
conventicle, a conventicle.
convenir, to agree with, to meete.
convaincre, to convince.
Il conſte, it is manifeſt.
Il convient, it is meet.

Contredire, to gain-say.
Il se Controuve, it is invented, imagined, fained.
Contrefaire, to counterfeit.
Il se Convertit, hee turneth, converteth.
Coriandre, Coriander.
Corde, a rope, a cord.
Costé, a side.
Cordonnier, a shooe-maker.
Corps, a body.
Contester, to contest.
Coude, an elbow.
Courge, a gourd.
Coup, a blow.
Cour, a Court.
Courroux, anger.
Correspondre, to correspond, to hold correspondence.
Il court, there runneth.
Convier, to invite.
Couvee, a brood.
Couteau, a knife.
Contelet, a little knife.
Couuertle, a cover.
Coutre, the culter of a Plow.
Coulomb, a Dove, Pigeon.
Couldre, to sowe.
Coulpe, a fault, guilt.
Couurir, to cover.
Courbe, crooked, a bought.
Cousin, a cousen.
Il couste, it costeth.
Crane, the skull.
Cresse, Cipresse.
Crible, a sieve.
Crime, crime.
Craindre, to feare.
Crainte, feare.
Cresspin, Crispin, the shoomakers saint.
Croce, a crosier staffe.
Crotesque, rude, confused worke in painting.
Crieur, a crier, brawler.
Croche, a hooke.
Il croist, there groweth.
Crocodile, a Crocodile.
Croix, a crosse.
Croire, to beleeve.

Il ſe croit, it is beleeved.
crouler, to ſhake, wag.
crue, *crene*, growne, growth.
Il ſe cueille, there is gathered.
Il Cuit, it ſmarteth, ſtingeth.
cuivre, Copper.
cuider, to thinke, deeme.
cuillier, a ſpoone.
cueiller, to gather, collect.
cul, the arſe.
curateur, a gardian, tutor.
curieux, curious.
Dangier, danger,
Damaſquiner, to damaske.
dague, a Dagger.
Dannemarc, Denmarke.
debvoir, or *Devoir*, to owe.
debte, debt.
debteur, a debtour.
desbuſquer, to depart, flit, march away.
debatre, to debate.
Decevoir, to deceave.
decliner, to decline.
deces, *decez*, a deceaſe, or departing by death.
delecter, to delight.
delectable, delightfull.
delict, a fault.
defaillir, to faile, faint, decay.
defendre, to defend.
defuir, to flie.
decuire, to decoct.
defaire, to undoe.
deffendre, to forbid.
deduire, to deduct, diſcourſe.
degeler, to thaw.
daigner, to vouchſafe.
dedaigner, to diſdaine.
demangeaiſon, an itch.
demander, to aske.
demandeur, an asker, plaintife.
demordre, to diſtaſte, forgoe hold.
decheoir, to fall downe, from.
demettre, to lay downe, diſmiſſe, give over.

Déloger,

loger, desloger, to dislodge.
livrer, to deliver.
dier, to Dedicate.
lent, a tooth.
lpartir, to divide, to depart.
lmouvoir, to remove.
lpartie, a departure.
lastre, a mischance.
lapprendre, to unlearn.
lscendre, to descend.
lsconfire, to disconfite.
lscoudre, to unrip.
lscroire, to discredite, not to beleeve.
lscroistre, to decrease.
lscrire, to describe.
lsconnoistre, *descognoistre*, to unknowe, forget to know.
ll desmange, it itcheth.
lsmentir, to give the lie unto, to belie.
lspendre, to spend.
lsesperer, to despaire, or be out of hope.
lsplaire, to displease.
ll desplaist, it displeaseth.
Desdire, to unsay, recant.
desplaisant, displeasant.
desirer, to desire.
se Despescher, to dispatch.
destiner, to destinate.
destourber, to disturbe.
destourner, to turne aside.
destruire, to destroy.
destendre, to unbend, unstretch.
desservir, to take away.
detordre, to writhe.
devenir, to become.
devestir, to uncloathe.
devoir, duty, to owe.
dévoler, to flie downe.
detracteur, a slanderer.
il Deut, it greeveth.
dicter, to dictate.
dict, said, a saying.
diminuër, to diminish.
il se dit, it is said.
differer, to deferre.
discourir, to discourse.
devalee, a descent.
dissoudre, to dissolve.

Distraire, to distract.
se Divertir, to divert, or withdraw himselfe.
divers, divers,
dissentir, to dissent.
dispenser, to dispense.
dissuader, to dissuade.
divertir, to divert.
se Diligenter, to bee diligent, bestir himselfe, hasten.
discret, discreet,
disputer, to dispute,
Dieu God. *Dieux*, plur,
dispos, nimble, active.
Dialogue, a Dialogue.
Dioceſe, a Dioceſſe.
doctiſſime, most learned.
domicile, a house, mansion.
dominer, to governe, rule.
doigt, a finger.
dompter, to tame.
docile, docible, teachable.
dominateur, a Master, Ruler.
donatiſte, a Donatist.
Donner, to give.
divorce, Divorcement.
douaire, a Dowre.
dogue, a Maſtiffe.
Docteur, a Doctor.
double, double, twofold.
douceur, ſweetneſſe, gentleneſſe.
douter, to doubt.
douleur, ſorrow, griefe.
doux, ſweet, gentle.
dragee, ſweet meates.
Duc, a Duke.
Duché, a Dukedome.
drap, cloth.
duire, to uſe, frame, lead to.
il Duit, it helpeth; it is good.
durcir, to harden.
Eau, water.
Edict, an Edict, ſtatute.
edifice, a building.
employer, to employ.
endormir, to ſleepe, fall a ſleepe.
Empereur, an Emperour.
empyreume, a drie heate.
Empire, Empire.

Emplaſtre,

Emplastre, a plaister.
enfant, a childe, infant.
enfançon, enfantelet, a little childe.
enfuir, to flee away.
encourrir, to incurre.
empescher, to hinder.
enfreindre, to infringe.
enclorre, to inclose.
Il ennuye, to annoy, grieve.
Il s'Ensuit, it followeth.
endurer, to endure.
encharger, to give in charge.
enjoindre, to enjoyne.
engarder, to keepe from.
embesongner, to busie, imploy.
ensuivre, to ensue.
effect, effect.
effectuër, to effect.
enquerir, to inquire.
embellir, to beautifie.
empirer, to impaire, or make worse.
enlaider, to make foule.
encherir, to enhance the price, make deare.
Enregistrer, to Register.
enseigner, to teach.
S'Ennuyer, to be grieved, to be wearied, or vexed with.
Entretenir, to entertaine.
entendre, to understand.
entreluire, to shine betweene, to appeare, give a glimpse.
entreprendre, to undertake.
entresuivre, to follow close, or one in necke of another.
entrer, to enter.
entr'ouir, to heare a little.
entr'ouvrir, to halfe open.
Epitaphe, an Epitaph.
escamper, to scape, runne away.
escarbillat, lustie, frollicke.
escarbot, a Beetle.
escargot, a snaile.
escarlatin, of Skarlet.
escarlate, Skarlet.

Escarpins,

Escarpin, a pumpet.
escabeau, a stoole.
escarcelle, a powch.
escalade, a scalado, fraling.
escarre, a scarre.
escart, a discarding.
eselair, lightening.
esclairer, to shine, to lighten.
esclandre, a slander.
eschoir, to happen, or fall out.
esbatre, to sport.
s'Esbahir, to wonder.
il Esclaire, it lightneth.
il s'Esclaircit, it cleereth up.
esboüillir, to boyle throughly.
engager, to ingage, pawne, pledge.
eschaper, to escape.
erreur, errour.
escient, *à son escient*, wittingly.
eschole, a Schoole.
esclorre, to hatch forth.
Escopeterie, a volly shot.
escorne, shame, disgrace.
escoüade, a Captaines traine.
esclat, a shiver, splinter.
escouter, to hearken, to heare.
Escosse, Scotland.
escume, foame, froth, scumme.
escu, a crowne in money, a shield.
escusson, a scutcheon.
esconduire, to denie.
escorce, a barke of a tree.
escrire, to write.
Esglise, a Church.
esguiser, to whet.
il s'escrit, it is written.
encliner, to incline.
endurcir, to harden.
enorgueillir, to make, or waxe proud.
enforcer, to enforce, strengthen.
engoudir, to bentumme.
engrosser, to greaten, get with childe.

Eslever,

Eſleuer, to lift vp, raiſe.
enhardir, to imbolden, hearten.
engraiſſer, to fatten.
enmaigrir, to make lean.
enricher, to enrich.
envenimer, to venome.
envieillir, to waxe old.
eſclaircir, to cleere.
entree, an entrance.
entrepriſe, an enterpriſe.
entremiſe, a mediation, or entermedling betweene parties.
S'Efforcer, to indevour, ſtrive.
eſpais, thicke.
eſtroit, ſtrait, narrow.
eſponge, a Spunge.
eſpingle, a pinne.
eſmail, an enammell.
eſmouvoir, to move, ſtirre up.
eſguiere, an Ewre.
eſmoudre, to grinde.
eſpandre, to ſhedde, to ſpill.
eſpardre, to diſperſe, ſcatter.
Eſprendre, to preſſe, ſqueeze out.
eſpace, a ſpace.
eſpece, a kinde of.
Eſpagne, Spaine.
eſperer, to hope.
eſpoir, *Eſperance*, hope.
eſpouſeter, to bruſh.
eſprit, a ſpirit, minde, wit.
eſpion, a ſpie,
eſquadron, a ſquadron.
eſquiver, to ſhunne, eſchew.
eſquarrir, to ſquare out.
eſquierre, a Carpenters ſquire.
eſquif, a skiffe, a little boate.
eſtudier, to ſtudie.
eſtoile, a ſtarre.
eſtame, worſted.
eſtafier, a foot boy.
eſté, ſummer.
eſtimer, to eſteeme.
eſteindre, to quench.
eſtendre, to extend, ſtretch.

s'Eſtonner,

s'Eſtonner, to bee aſtoniſhed.
eſpaiſſir, to thicken.
eſlargir, to enlarge.
eſtrecir, to ſtraiten, or make narrow.
eſloigner, to put farre away.
eſtage, a ſtorie or loft.
eſlire, to chooſe.
eſtropier, to mayme.
eſtropiat, maimed, lame.
eſtrapade, the ſtrapado.
eſtradiot, a light horſeman.
eſtrade, a ſtreete, highway.
eſtoc, the ſtocke of a tree.
eſtoccade, a ſtoccado, or thruſt.
eſtui, a caſe.
eſventail, a fanne.
eſtoffe, ſtuffe.
eſvannoüir, to vaniſh.
s'eſvertuër, *s'evertuër*, to labour, ſtrive, force himſelfe.
evader, to eſcape.
evaluer, to rate, prize.
Eveſque, a Biſhop.
eveſché, a Biſhopricke.
Eunuque, an Eunuch.
Evangeliſte, an Evangeliſt.
eternel, eternall.
exiés, exceſſe, ryot, ſurfeit.
excluure, to exclude.
excuſer, to excuſe.
exercer, to exerciſe.
example, an example.
exerciſe, exerciſe.
eviter, to avoide.
exorde, an Exordium.
expedier, to diſpatch.
expedient, an helpe, fit meanes, ſhift.
experience, experience.
exploit, an exploit.
exploicter, to exploit.
extreme, extreame.
expoſer, to expoſe, expound.
s'Eſmerveiller, to marvel.
s'Eſioüir, to rejoyce, bee merrie.
extraire, to extract.
Façon, faſhion.

Facteur,

Facteur, a Factour.
Faict, a deed, fact, done.
fade, unsavory, tastelesse.
faire, to make, to doe.
il se fait, there is done, made.
Faillir, to faile.
Faim, hunger.
fantasme, *fantosme*, a gost, spirit, hobgoblin.
faner, to fade.
fascher, to anger.
se fascher, to be angrie.
façonner, to fashion.
facilité, easinesse, facilitie.
faon, a Fanne.
faonner, a Doe to fawne.
facile, easie.
faix, a burthen, weight.
faveur, favour.
faulx, a Sithe.
faux, false.
fer, Iron.
femme, a woman.
femmette, *femmelette*, a little woman.
felon, fell, fellonious.
ferme, firme.
Fertile, fertile.
feste, a feast, holy day.
festin, a banquet, feast.
fantasque, fantasticall.
fendre, to cleave.
feindre, to faine.
fenaison, hay harvest.
fenestre, a window.
feu, fire.
feutre, a Felt.
feurre, or *foarre*, straw.
fier, proud, to trust.
fient, dung.
fiction, a fiction.
fievre, an ague, fever.
fidele, faithfull.
fil, thread.
fils, a sonne.
fin, end, also, cunning.
finet, somewhat cunning.
finir, to end, to finish.
fifre, a Fife.
fiel, gall.
flasque, a flaske.
flechir, to bend, bow.
flestrir, to fade, withee.
flegme, fleame.
fleuve, a river, floud.

flateur,

Flateur, a flatterer.
flatteur, a little flatterer.
flat, a flap, or clap.
foible, weake, feeble.
fol, a foole, or foolish.
forme, a forme.
se forger, to forge, imagine.
foison, store, plentie.
fois, time.
forclore, as *forclorre*.
forfaire, to misdoe, forfeit.
forclorre, to exclude.
forrest, a forrest.
fortraire, to lurch.
fournir, to furnish.
force, force, strength.
fourbe, a fell, wile, deceit.
foy, faith.
foye, the liver.
florir, to flourish.
frais, fresh, new.
François, Francis, frenchman.
franc, free.
friche, untilled, fallow.
frimas, a thicke mist.
Frisonner, to shiver with cold.
frisque, lively, briske.
froid, cold.
froncle, a felon, or wencome.
froidure, coldnesse, cold weather.
fruict, fruit.
fueillu, leavie, full of leaves.
funebre, Funerall, mourning.
funerailles, Funeralls.
Gabelle, impost, custome.
Gage, a gage, pledge, pawne, &c.
galop, a galop.
garder, to keepe.
garbe, a garbe, comelinesse, grace.
garde, gard, ward, keeping.
gasche, an Oare.
gastadour, a pioner.
gaspiller, to waste, lavish.
garentir, to warrant.
general, generall.
gentil, gentle, prettie.

[illegible], a twinne.
[illegible], a Gadler.
[illegible]ievre, Iuniper.
[illegible], to lie in, to lie down
[illegible]stes, gest: gests.
[illegible]ndarme, a man of armes.
[illegible]rme, a bud, a sprout.
[illegible]ndre, a sonne in law.
[illegible]nre, kinde.
[illegible]nt, a nation, a stocke.
[illegible]nil, a knee.
[illegible]ler, to freeze.
[illegible]ngembre, Ginger.
[illegible]sant, lying.
[illegible]ste, a bed, a couch.
[illegible]bier, game of fowle hawked.
[illegible]land, an Akorne.
[illegible]lobe, a globe.
[illegible]laive, a glave, a sword.
[illegible]lu, birdlime.
[illegible]oinfre, a wag, knavish lad.
[illegible]orge, the throat.
[illegible]ouster, to taste.
[illegible]oufre, a gulfe.
[illegible]ouverneur, a Governour.
Gouverner, to governe.
gracieux, gratious.
grand, great.
gras, fat.
grave, grave.
grace, grace.
grandissime, most great.
grasset, grasselet, somewhat fat.
graissir, or greslir, to wax slender, thin, small.
greffe, a graffe.
griffe, a claw, a tallon.
griever, to grieve.
greve, sand, gravell, shore.
grief, grievous.
Greguesque, Greekish.
grec, gretian, greekish.
griller, to breyle.
gris, grey.
gros, grosse, big, a groat.
grossir, to grow bigge, grosse.
grouler, to stirre, sprall.
guarisson, an healing.
guerir, to heale, to cure.
gueer, to wade.
guerre, warre.

guise,

guise, guise.
guide, a guide.
Harang, an Herring.
Haleine, breath.
haïr, to hate.
hannir, to neigh.
Hardy, bold.
harangue, an Oration.
hasard, hazard.
Hauer, to hante, fre-
quent.
hanap, a cup, a gobblet.
haute, high.
haine, hatred.
Havre, an Haven.
habitacle, a dwelling
place.
haste, some-burning.
hault, a with, a halter.
haye, a hedge.
habiliter, to enable.
heim, a fish-hooke.
hamecon, a little fish-
hooke.
hister, to hoise.
hausser, to hoist, lift on
high.
heaulme, an Helmet.
heritier, an heire.
heritage, an inherit
herbage, pasture, her
Herce, a harrow
herboriste, an herbal
heure, an houre.
heur, hap, lucke.
heureux, happie.
Hieroſme, Ierome.
hiſtoire, an hiſtorie.
homme, a man.
hommeau, hommet,
hommelet, a little
homicide, a man-slau-
ter.
honneſte, honeſt.
honnir, to shame.
honneur, honour.
hongre, a gelding.
hoſte, an hoſt, a gueſt.
horloge, a clocke.
huictieſme, the eight.
huile, oyle.
humble, humble.
humeur, humour.
humide, moiſt.
Ialoux, Ielous.
jambe, the legge.
januier, Ianuary.

...e, a jasper stone.
...ir, to waxe yellow.
..., a counter.
...ter, to cast, to hurle.
...ne, young.
...lole, an Idoll.
..., play.
...mare, ignorant.
...ginер, to imagine.
...ustrissime, most illustrious.
...age, an image.
...becille, weake.
...peratrice, an Empresse.
...ustre, illustrious.
...prouiste, as *à l'improviste*, on a sudden.
...propere, an exprobration, upbraiding.
...convenient, an inconvenience.
...fecter, to infect.
...gredient, ingredient.
...ceste, incest.
...imitié, enmitie.
...firme, weake.
...norer, to bee ignorant.
...citer, to incite.
Incliner, to incline.
incommoder, to incommodate, hinder, trouble.
il Importe, it importeth.
instiguer, to provoke.
inscrire, to inscribe.
induire, to induce.
inspirer, to inspire.
instant, instant.
intime, inward.
instruire, to instruct.
inviter, to invite.
joye, joy.
jointure, a joynt.
joly, pretty.
Investiture, an Investiture.
jouer, to play.
Inventeur, an inventer.
joue, the cheeke.
joug, a yoake.
joyau, a Iewell.
intervenir, to come betweene.
inclus, included.
joindre, to joyne.
introduire, to bring in.

Il s'invente, there is invented.
Il intervient, there came betweene.
joyeux, joyfull, merrie.
iſſue, the iſſue, end, ſucceſſe.
Italien, an Italian.
juge, a Iudge.
juger, to judge.
jument, a Mare.
jumeau, a twinne.
juilet, the moneth luly.
juriſte, a Lawyer.
juſte, juſt, righteous.
juſtice, juſtice, righteouſneſſe.
juſquiame, henbane.
Laict, milke.
Laine, wooll.
laiſſer, to leave.
lange, a woollen ſwathe.
laqs, a ſnare, a grin.
lanſquenet, a lance Knight.
labeur, labour.
larron, a theefe.
larronneur, a petty theefe.
Largeur, bredth, largneſſe, wideneſſe.
laſche, ſlack, looſe, faint, cowardly.
laſcher, to ſlacken, looſe.
ſe laſſer, to be, or waxe weary.
leçon, a leſſon.
leger, light.
legiſte, a Lawyer.
legume, pulſe.
leſte, quicke, lively.
lever, to riſe.
levre, a lippe.
laxive, lie to bucke clothes.
liberalité, liberalitie.
lict, a bed.
licol, a halter, a rope.
lieu, place, roome.
lièvre, a Hare.
libre, free.
lice, a liſts; alſo bitch.
lierre, Ivie.
limeſtre, a kinde of cloth whereof hoodes be made.

sible, which may bee read.
lombe, limbo.
limon, slime, mud, mire.
linge, linnen.
lion, a Lyon.
liste, a list, roll, catalogue.
litige, suit in law, contention.
livrer, to deliver.
long, long.
longueur, length.
loger, to lodge.
loer, *louer*, to hire, rent out.
louable, praise-worthy.
louer, to praise.
loup, a Wolfe.
louche, squint-eyed, porblinde.
loy, law, the law.
luicter, to wrastle.
luminaire, a light, lampe.
lustre, a luster, glosse.
Maison, a house.
main, the hand.
magie, magicke.
maigre, leane.
Maistre, a master.
maligne, whay.
mait, a hutch.
maisonnette, a little house.
maintenir, to maintaine.
maint, many.
malade, sicke.
maladie, sickenesse.
malheur, mishap, misfortune.
manche, a handle, a sleeve.
manege, the manage of a horse.
manquer, to want.
manteau, a cloake.
manteler, a little cloake.
maquereau, a Pander.
maquerelle, a shee bawde, a makerell fish.
marbre, marble.
marchand, a marchant.
marron, the great chestnut.
marri, sad, sorie, grieved.
marroquin, Spanish leather.

Martyre, martyrdome.
marrisson, griefe, sorrow.
marchander, to cheapen, to bargaine, to trafficke.
marrer, to dig, labour.
massacre, a massacre.
masque, a maske, a vizard.
mastic, masticke.
mastin, a mastiffe dog.
masle, a male.
matin, the morning.
mansade, harsh, lowtish, rude.
maudire, to curse.
mauvais, evill, wicked.
maux, evills.
se mesler, to meddle, mingle, intermeddle.
mer, the sea.
mestier, an occupation, trade, also neede.
messager, a messenger.
mesure, measure.
menstruel, menstruous.
meilleur, better.
menu, small, little, thin.
Mercier, a Haberdasher of small wares.
mercerot, a Pedler.
menteur, a lyar.
melon, a melon, million
mensonge, a lye.
mesche, a match, a wee
meule, or *meulle*, a mil stone.
merle, a black-bird.
merci, mercie, thanked
mescroire, to mistrust.
mesdire, to speake evi of.
mesconnoistre, to mistake not to know, to neg lect.
mesfaire, to wrong, mi doe.
mesprendre, to mistake.
il meurt, it dyeth.
se mettre, to set or p himselfe to it.
meurir, to ripen.
mettre peine, to ende vour, to labour, ta paines.
mettre ordre, to take o der.

lignard, a wanton, wanton.
ignardet, *mignardelet*, a little wanton.
iel, honie.
-partir, to part or divide into halves.
ise, expence, layings out.
iracle, a miracle.
il, the graine Millet.
ignon, a minion, daintie.
iniſtre, a Miniſter.
iſte, neat, ſpruce.
ilitaire, militarie.
ince, thin, fine, ſlender.
odule, a modell.
ol, ſoft.
odeſte, modeſt.
oitié, the halfe, moitie.
oite, moiſt.
ine, a Monke.
oiſſon, harveſt.
oitir, to make moiſt.
oiſir, to mould, bee mouldie.
llir, to ſoften.
moleſte, troubleſome.
mode, a manner, faſhion.
monde, the world.
monſtre, a monſter; alſo a ſhew, a muſter.
monter, to mount, get up.
morfondre, to take cold.
moreſque, a Moore woman.
morne, ſad, heavy, lumpiſh.
mortifere, mortiferous.
mouiller, to wet.
mouldre, to grinde.
moſquet, a Muſket.
montee, an aſcent.
moſquée, the Turks temple.
mot, a word.
mouſle, a mittaine.
mouchettes, ſnuffers.
moule, a mould.
mort, death.
mouſtache, a muſtachoe.
mouſtarde, muſtard.
mouvoir, to move.
mouſtele, a Weeſell.

moyenner, to bee the meanes of to effect.
moy-meſme, my ſelfe.
muſle, the ſnout, muzzel.
multiplier, to multiply.
murmure, murmure.
muſc, muske.
muſcles, muſcles.
muſitien, a Muſitian.
myſtere, a myſterie.
Nape, *nappe*, a table-cloth.
naiſtre, to be borne.
narrer, to declare.
naveau, a Navew roote.
navire, a ſhippe.
nef, a ſhip; body of a Church.
il neige, it ſnoweth.
negoce, a buſineſſe.
nepveu, a nephew.
net, cleane, neat.
nez, a noſe.
nicher, to neſtle.
niepce, a Neece.
nier, to denie.
nid, a neaſt.
nettete, cleanneſſe.
Neuf, new: alſo nine.
niais, a neaſtling.
noirir, to blacke.
noix, a wall-nut.
nourrir, to nouriſh.
noirceur, blackneſſe.
nonnain, a Nunne.
nopces, a mariage, wedding.
novice, a novice.
nourri, nouriſhed.
nourriſſon, a nurſe child.
nourrice, a Nurce.
nourricier, a foſter-father.
noter, to note, to mark.
nouveau, new.
nombre, number.
nud, *nuë*, naked.
nuict, night.
nuire, to hurt.
Obeliſque, an obeliske.
obliger, to oblige, bind.
obmettre, to omit.
obſtacle, an obſtacle.
s'obſtiner, to bee obſtinate.
obole, a halfe penie.
obſeques, funerall rites.
obtenir, to obtaine.

caſion, occaſion.
caſionner, to occaſion.
cuper, to occupie, buſie.
dieux, hatefull, odious.
il, an eye.
uf, an egge.
fice, office, dutie.
ffre, an offer.
ffrir, to offer.
indre, to annoint.
ingnon, an Onion.
ngle, a naile, hoofe claw.
piner, to give his opinion.
pinion, opinion.
opiniaſtrer, to bee opinionate.
pprobre, a reproach.
ption, choice.
ratoire, an oratorie.
raiſon, an oration, prayer.
rdinaire, ordinarie.
racle, an Oracle.
rdonner, to ordaine.
rdre, order.
rge, barlie.

Orient, the Eaſt.
oſer, to dare.
oſtade, Worſted ſtuffe.
ovale, an Ovall.
ouvrir, to open.
Paiſtre, to feed.
Paix, peace.
Palais, a Palace, the palate.
palomb, a Ring-dove.
pancher, to bend, or leane forwards.
palle, *paſle*, pale.
paon, a Peacocke.
panache, a plume of feathers.
pareil, like: match.
parricide, a parricide.
part, a part.
partir, to divide, to part.
parterre, a floore, a plot.
parcroiſtre, to ripen.
parfaire, to performe.
parvenir, to attaine unto.
paſque, *Paſques*, Eaſter.
paſquil, a poſt in Rome, where libels are fixed.
paſtel, Woade.

Paſtenades, Carots, Parſneps.
paſtorelle, a ſhepheardeſſe.
paſtoureau, a paſtour.
paonner, to play the peacocke.
paſté, a pie, a paſtie.
paſſer, to paſſe.
paſſion, paſſion.
paſmoiſon, a ſwoone.
patient, patient.
patrimoine, a patrimonie.
paulme, *paulme*, the palme of the hand; a ball.
pauvre, poore.
ſe Peiner, to take paines, to indevour the utmoſt.
peine, paine, paines.
peage, toll.
peageur, a toll-gatherer.
peau, the skin, hide.
peigne, a combe.
penſer, to thinke: a thought.
pecore, a ſheepe, ſot.
pedagogue, a ſchoole-maſter.
Peindre, to paint.
pendre, to hang.
pendart, a crack-rope.
paroy, a wall.
pendardeau, a little crack.
penſioniſte, a penſioner.
pepon, a Pompion.
perplex, perplexed.
payement, payment.
peril, danger, perill.
perſiſter, to perſiſt.
perle, a Pearle.
ſe perdre, to deſtroy himſelfe.
ſe Permettre, to ſuffer himſelfe.
permettre, to permit.
pecheur, a ſinner.
piler, to pun, bray, ſtamp.
piller, to pill; poll, rifle.
peſer, to weigh.
peſte, plague. peſtilence.
piſteau, a Peſtle.
pitié, pittie.
pied, a foot.
philoſophe, a Philoſopher.
peſtifere, peſtiferous.
piece, a peece.

Piaffe, a bragging.
pipee, a fowlers chirping to deceive birds.
piege, a ſnare, grinne.
pinacle, a pinacle.
phantaſme, as *Fantaſme*.
phlegme, fleame.
pinette, a kinde of Sider.
pipe, a bird-call.
pilote, a Pilote.
pique, a pike, a pike-man.
pincettes, Pincers.
plein, full.
pleuvir, to plevin, warrant.
plomb, Lead.
playe, a wound.
plage, a ſtrand, or flat ſhore.
pleige, a pledge, a ſuretie.
plaire, to pleaſe.
plomber, to lead.
plaſtre, a plaiſter.
pluye, raine.
poinct, a point, a pricke.
poil, haire.
poëme, a Pöeme.
il me Poiſe, it lies heavie on me.
il Pleut, it raineth.
pluſieurs, many.
poix, pitch.
il pert, it appeareth.
poivre, Pepper.
politic, politicke.
populace, the baſer ſort of people.
populaire, the common people.
pore, a pore.
portail, a portall.
porc, a hog, Porke.
porcquet, a Pig, a young porke.
porreau, a Leeke, a wart.
portugaiſe, a Portague.
portefaix, a Porter.
poſtillon, a Poſtillion.
poſtille, a poſtill.
poſte, a Poſte.
poulſer, *pouſſer*, to thruſt, puſh.
pourchaſſer, to procure, purchaſe.
poulpitre, a Pulpit, deske.
poulpe, pulpe.

Possible, possible.
pouce, the thumbe.
pourtraire, to purtray.
pourrir, to rot.
pourvoir, to provide.
pourpre, Purple.
poursuivre, to pursue.
preparer, to prepare.
predire, to foretell.
prelude, a Preludium.
prendre, to take.
precepte, a Precept.
pré, a medow.
precipice, a steepe downfall.
prepuce, the fore-skin.
preambule, a Preamble.
presomption, presumption.
prester, to lend.
pleur, a teare.
presser, to presse.
prestation, a prest, alone.
prestige, a delusion, deceit.
pretexte, a pretence.
prescrire, to prescribe.
pretendre, to pretend.
prevenir, to prevent.
Prier, to pray.
prieur, a Prior.
prestre, a Priest.
Prince, a Prince.
prinse, a taking. *Prisee*, *idem*.
priviledge, a priviledge.
priser, to prize, esteeme.
proche, neere, nigh.
procureur, a Procter.
procurean, a petrie Proctor:
prohiber, to prohibite.
portee, the burthen of the wombe.
prodige, a prodigie.
prodigue, prodigall.
pourfendre, to cleave through.
produire, to produce.
probation, a proofe.
principe, a principle.
prison, a prison.
prix, price.
profiter, to profite.
prologue, a Prologue.
project, a project.
proces, a sute in law.
promettre, to promise.

Propos,

pos, a purpose, talke.
proscrire, to proscribe.
propre, proper, owne, fit.
prospere, prosperous.
protecteur, a protectour.
prosne, a publication by the Priest.
protocole, copie of a deed.
provenir, to issue, come from, or spring of.
proverbe, a proverbe.
il Provient, there proceeds.
se prouver, to bee proved.
psalme, a psalme.
prune, a plumme.
prunelle, the eye ball.
prudent, prudent.
puceau, pucelle, a maid, virgin, maiden.
publicque, publicke.
pudicque, pudic, chaste.
pupille, a pupill, ward.
puce, a flea.
pulpitre, as *poulpitre*.
putain, a whore.
Rabat, a beater, falling-band.
Rable, a Plaisterers beater.
rabaisser, to abate, abase.
raconter, to tell, relate.
rajeunir, to waxe young againe.
raison, reason.
raifort, a Radish roote.
raisin, a Grape, a Raisin.
ramentevoir, to remember, to put in minde of.
rancir, to waxe mustie.
rang, a ranke, row.
rançon, a ransome.
rare, rare.
ras, shaven: Serge stuffe.
rate, the spleene, milte.
ravaler, to pull downe.
reciter, to rehearse.
recevoir, to receave.
rebouillir, to boile againe.
rasseoir, to settle, sit downe.
recheoir, to fall againe.
recluyre, to shut up close.

Reconnoistre,

Reconnoiſtre, to acknowledge.
recevoir, to receave.
reboucher, to blunt, to ſtop againe.
recevable, receivable.
rebelle, rebellious.
reculer, to recoile, goe backe.
recourir, to reſcue; to have recourſe unto.
recoudre, to ſow over againe.
recuire, to ſeeth againe.
redire, to repeate, ſay againe.
reduire, to reduce.
ſe Ranger, to frame himſelfe to.
ravir, to raviſh, ſnatch away.
reel, reall.
recueil, a collection, entertainment.
redevable, endebted, beholden to.
refuſer, to refuſe.
refuir, to flee backe, flee from.
Refondre, to melt again
refaire, to repaire, ma again.
refuge, a refuge.
regime, a regiment, rule.
regne, raigne.
regiſtre, a Regiſter.
regarder, to behold, look on.
il regne, there raigneth.
reſjouir, to rejoyce.
reiterer, to reiterate.
reiſtre, a Reiſter, German horſe-man.
reluire, to ſhine.
remarquer, to marke, obſerve.
remede, to remedie.
renard, a Fox.
renom, renowne, fame.
repartir, to redivide; replie.
requerir, to require, requeſt.
rendre, to render, yeeld.
rependre, to hang up againe.
reuclorre, to re-incloſe.
remordre, to bite againe.

Se Rencontre, there occurreth.
remuer, to ſtirre, move.
renchérir, to raiſe the price.
renforcer, to re-inforce.
repos, reſt.
repaire, a lodge, a haunt.
repaiſtre, to feede, give food.
reperdre, to loſe againe.
reprendre, to take backe, to reprove.
reſcrire, to write backe.
reſervir, to ſerve againe.
reſerrer, to cloſe, or ſhut up.
reſembler, to reſemble.
Se Reſſentir, to be ſenſible of.
reſpandre, to ſhed; to ſpill.
reſpondre, to anſwer.
il reſte, it remaineth.
reſtrecir, to ſtraiten, reſtraine.
reſtreindre, to reſtraine.
reſpit, a reſpite, delay.
reſtablir, to re-eſtabliſh.
Reſveil, a ſtirring up, wakening.
reſveiller, to awake.
reſver, to rave, dote, ſpeake idly.
reſverie, raving, dotage.
rets, a net.
retenir, to retaine.
retarder, to hinder.
retordre, to writhe.
retourner, to returne.
revenir, to come againe.
reveſtir, to reinveſt.
revivre, to revive, live againe.
reverdir, to waxe greene againe.
reünir, to reunite.
reverendiſſime, moſt reverend.
riche, rich.
riſque, perill, danger.
ride, a wrinkle.
ris, laughter.
roidir, to ſtiffen, be ſtiffe.
rompre, to breake.
roſtir, to roſte.
rompre, to be broken.
roide, ſtiffe.

Rond, round.
Roine, a Queene.
robe, a gowne.
roole, *Roule*, a roule.
rouge, red.
rouget, somewhat red.
roux, rediſh.
rouſſir, to make red, wax red.
rougir, to bluſh.
rouë, a wheele.
rouëlle, a little wheele.
Roy, a King.
royaume, a kingdome.
ruë, a ſtreet.
ruëlle, a lane.
rude, rude, rough.
ruble, ſixe hundred pound weight.
ruſe, ſubtiltie, a wile.
ruſtaud, a clowne.
ruſtic, *Ruſticque*, ruſtick, clowniſh.
ruſtre, a Roiſter, Ruffin.
Quadruple, *Quatruple*, foure fold, foure double.
quareſme, lent.
quarre, a ſquare.
quantieſme, of what number.
quatrain, a ſtaffe of foure verſes.
queſtion, a queſtion.
Queuë, a tayle.
Sable, ſand; ſable couler.
ſac, a ſacke.
ſage, wiſe.
ſaillir, to iſſue forth, to leape.
ſalaire, a ſalarie, wages, hire.
ſaigner, to bleed, to let blood.
ſale, ſoule, filthy.
ſalubre, wholſome.
ſaluer, to ſalute.
ſalut, health, ſafetie, ſalvation.
ſalir, to ſalt; to defile.
ſang, blood.
ſangle, a girth.
ſachet, a little ſacke.
ſanté, health.
ſaoul, full, glutted.
ſatisfaire, to ſatisfie.

allie, a ſallie, iſſue, a leape.
auce, ſawce.
acrifice, ſacrifice.
auge, ſage hearbe.
avatte, an old ſhooe.
auveur, a Saviour.
avourer, to ſavour.
aye, a ſide coate, a caſſocke.
avant, ſkilfull, learned.
ie, a ſaw.
rupule, a ſcruple.
ceptre, a Scepter.
ience, ſcience, knowledge.
et, drie.
ecourir, to ſuccour.
editieux, ſeditious.
eduire, to ſeduce.
el, a ſeale.
eigle, Rie corne.
emaine, a weeke.
epulchre, a Sepulchre.
el, ſalt.
echer, to drie.
emer, to ſowe ſeed.
Se ſeme, there is ſowed, or ſpread abroad.
Septention, the north.
ſeneſtre, ſiniſter, left.
ſequeſtre, he into whoſe hands a thing is ſequeſtred.
ſembler, to ſeeme.
il ſert, it ſerveth.
il Semble, it ſeemeth.
ſereniſſime, moſt famous, a title given to Princes.
ſergent, a Sergeant.
ſergenteau, *ſergentelet*, a pettie Sergeant.
ſemondre, to ſummond.
ſervil, ſervile.
ſerviteur, a ſervant.
ſevere, ſevere.
ſeul, alone.
ſeur, ſure.
ſervice, ſervice.
ſigne, a ſigne, token.
ſignifier, to ſignifie.
ſiniſtre, ſiniſter.
ſirops, ſirrops.
ſimple, ſimple, ſingle.
ſilence, ſilence.
ſinge, an Ape.

Siecle, an age.
Sire, Sir, a title given to the King.
il Sied, it becommeth.
ſoif, thirſt.
ſonde, a plummet to ſound with.
ſonge, a dreame.
ſommaire, a ſummarie.
ſoing, *ſoin*, care.
ſoleil, the Sunne.
ſoigner, to care.
ſommeil, ſleepe.
ſolide, ſolide.
ſobre, ſober.
ſombre, cloſe, darke, clowdie.
ſophiſte, a ſophiſter.
ſolicuter, to ſolicite.
ſonner, to ſound.
ſortir, to iſſue forth, come forth.
ſortie, an iſſue, or going forth.
ſongeard, a dreamer.
ſœur, a ſiſter.
ſot, a ſot, a foole.
ſouci, care.
ſoucier, to afflict with care.
ſe Soucier, to care for.
ſouëf, ſweet.
ſoufrir, to ſuffer.
ſouſle, breath, a blaſt.
ſoufre, *ſouphre*, brimſtone, ſulphure.
ſoulier, a ſhooe.
ſouple, ſupple, pliant.
ſoupçon, ſuſpition.
ſouhaiter, to wiſh.
ſoupçonner, to ſuſpect.
ſource, a Spring.
ſouris, a Mouſe.
il Sourd, there ariſeth.
ſouſcrire, to ſubſcribe.
ſouſtraire, to ſubſtract, or to withdraw.
ſe Souvenir, to remember.
il Souvient, hee remembers.
ſouſtenir, to ſuſtaine, or uphold.
ſubject, ſubject, a ſubject.
ſubmettre, to ſubmit.
ſubſide, helpe; a ſubſidie

Subſtanc

Substance, substance.
subit, sudden.
sublime, sublime, high.
subtil, subtle.
subvenir, to helpe, succour.
subvertir, to subvert.
succer, to sucke.
succez, successe.
sterile, barren.
spectacle, a spectacle.
style, a stile in writing.
suäire, a linnen cloth.
sucre, sugar.
soy-mesme, himselfe.
suader, to perswade.
il souffit, it sufficeth.
suër, to sweat.
sueil, a threshold.
superbe, proud, stately.
surcroistre, to overgrow.
surseoir, to surcease.
sursaillir, to leape on, to start.
surfaire, to overprise.
surprendre, to surprise.
survenir, to happen.
il Survient, there happeneth.
Survaincre, to overcome.
survivre, to survive.
suspect, suspected.
suspendre, to suspend.
syllabe, a syllable.
symbole, a badge, the Creed.
syncere, sincere.
synonyme, a synonima.
Table, a table.
Tabernacle, a Tabernacle.
tançon, a chiding.
tare, losse, unwares, tart, falt.
taon, a brizze, a gadflie.
targe, a Target.
il me tarde, I think long.
tarir, to drie up.
tasche, a taske.
tascher, to endeavour.
taster, to taste, feele, grope.
taxer, to taxe, rebuke.
tenailles, pincers, tongs.
tendre, tender.
tenir la main, to have

a hand in.
Temeraire, rash.
territoire, a Territorie.
tertre, a hillock.
terme, a terme.
terne, a Tray.
temps, time.
terre, earth, ground, land.
teſte, a head.
tempeſte, a tempeſt.
tempeſtif, ſeaſonable.
teſter, to make a Will.
teſtament, a teſtament, Will.
teſton, a boxe with the fiſt, a teſtoone.
teſtonner, to curle haire.
tete, a teat, dug.
texte, a text.
treſjuſte, moſt juſt.
treſchaſte, moſt chaſte.
il tient à, it is long of.
timbre, the creſt of an helmet, a colledge bell.
tine, a ſtand, or tub.
tiltre, a title.
theatre, a theater.
Throſne, a throne.
tigre, a Tiger.
tolerer, to tolerate.
tome, a Tome.
tonnerre, thunder.
tonne, a tunne.
tonnelle, a tunnell; arbor.
tomber, to fall.
tondre, to ſheare, clip.
il tonne, it thundreth.
il tombe, there falleth.
tordre, to wreathe, writhe.
torcher, to wipe.
tournoy, a Turney.
toux, a cough.
travail, travell, labour.
trahiſon, treaſon.
traïct, a dart, ſhaft, ſhot.
traicter, to treate, intreate.
trahir, to betray.
travailler, to labour.
tranſcrire, to copie out.
traduire, to tranſlate.
il ſe traite, there is handled.
trainer, to traile, drag.

Toy-meſme, thy ſelfe.
treſſaillir, to ſtart.
trembler, to tremble.
tremper, to dip, moiſten.
trenche plume, a pen-knife.
trictrac, the game, Tick-tack.
triſte, ſad, ſorowfull.
triple, threefold, triple.
triomphe, a triumph.
tribu, a tribe.
trophee, a trophie.
trouble, trouble.
trou, a hole.
trouver, to finde.
tuër, to kill.
tumulte, a tumult.
tuteur, a Tutour.
il ſe trouve, there is found.
Vacher, a Cow-heard.
vaſe, a veſſell.
ſe vanter, to vaunt, brag.
il vaut, it is worth.
vendre, to ſell.
veiller, to wake, to watch.
velu, hairie.
Vendange, vintage.
ventre, the belly.
venaiſon, veniſon.
venter, the winde to blow.
venuë, a comming.
verdir, to wax greene.
verme, a worme.
vermiſſeau, a little worm.
verre, a glaſſe.
vertu, vertue.
verité, truth.
vertueux, vertuous.
vermeil, vermillon.
verbe, a verb.
verroüil, a bolt for a dore.
veſtiaire, a Veſtrie.
veſtige, a ſtep, foottſtep.
veſtir, to clothe.
venë, a ſight, the ſight.
vieille, an old woman, old.
vielle, a crowd, a fiddle.
vieil, old.
veuf, a widower.
veuve, a widow.
vice, vice.
veſpre, the evening.

Vieillir, to waxe old.
il vient à bien, it ſucceedeth well, or *mal*, ill.
il vient à point, or *à propos*, it comes fitly, to purpoſe, or in good ſeaſon.
vif, *vive*, lively, alive, quicke.
vigne, a vine.
vil, vile, baſe.
ville, a citie, a walled towne.
vinaigre, vineger.
vingt, twentie.
viril, manly.
viſte, quick, ſwift.
viſtempenard, a duſter made of a Fox taile.
vitupere, blame, diſpraiſe.
vlcere, an vlcer.
voiſin, a neighbour, alſo neighbouring vnto.
vomir, to vomit.
volume, a volume.
il ſe void, there is ſeene.
voix, a voice.
vouër, to vow.
vouge, a hunting ſtaffe, a boare ſpeare.
vouloir, to will.
voye, a way; alſo a courſe.
vray, true.
util, profitable.
vuide, emptie, voide.
vulgaire, vulgar, common.
Yeulx, the eyes.
yver, winter.
yvre, drunken.
yvrongne, a drunkard.
Zele, zeale.

FINIS.

Dialogue premier.

De pluſieurs propos & devis familiers, par chemin, &c.

HEnry. *Bon jour monſieur Philippes.*

Phil. *Ha, Dieu vous gard Monſieur Henry, vous ſoyez le bien venu.*

Hen. *Haſtez vous monſieur je vous prie, car ces meſſieurs qui nous doivent accompagner ſont desja preſts.*

Phil. *Garçon, apporte-icy mes bottes & mes eſperons : Ie ſeray tantoſt preſt.*

Hen. *Vous voila maintenant botté & eſperonné.*

Phil. *Les chevaux ont ils bien mangez?*

Servant. *Ie leur ay donné leur ratelier plein de*

The firſt Dialogue.

Of many ſpeeches and familiar talke by the way, &c.

HEnry. Good morrow maſter Philip.

Philip. O, God ſave you maſter Henry, you are welcome.

Hen. Make haſt ſir, I pray you: for theſe gentlemen that are to goe with us, are ready already.

Phil. Boy, bring mee my bootes, and my ſpurs, I will bee ready preſently.

Hen. So, now you are booted and ſpurred.

Phil. Have the horſes eaten well?

Le ſerviteur. I gave them their racke full of

foin, & leur mangeoire pleine d'avoine, maintenant il n'y a pas un poil de foin, ni grain d'avoine.

Phil. *Fay-les seller & brider; je monteray mon alezan bruslé, mettez-y une housse; monsieur Henry montera le gris pommelé. Et ces autres Messieurs, comment sont ils equippez.*

Hen. *Monsieur le Docteur chevauche une belle hacquenee, monsieur Samuel un cheval de louage, bien maigre, & monsieur Misippe va dedans un chariot.*

Phil. *Et quant à nos serviteurs, ils nous suivront à pied.*

Le Serv. *Messieurs, tout est prest.* Phil. *ça montons.*

Hen. *Allons; quelle heure pensez-vous que ce soit?*

hay, and their manger full of oates, and now there is not one jotte of hay, nor one graine of oates left.

Phil. Let them bee saddled and bridled, I will ride upon my burnt-sorrell, put a foot-cloth on him: Mr. Henry shall ride the dapple gray. And those other Gentlemen, how are they furnished?

Henry. Master Doctor rides upon a faire ambling horse, master Samuel a hired horse verie leane, and master Misippus goes in a Waggon.

Phil. And as for our men, they shall follow us on foot.

Serv. Gentlemen, all is ready. *Phil.* Come let us take horse.

Hen. Let us goe; what doe you thinke it is a clocke?

Phil.

Phil. *Ie cognois au ſoleil qu'il eſt paſſé huict heures.*

Henry. *Dieu vous gard Meſſieurs, & toute la compagnie.*

Le Docteur. *Et vous auſſi, Monſieur Henry.*

Phil. *Bonne vie & longue monſieur le Docteur, & à toute voſtre compagnie, nous ſommes treſmarris vous faire tant attendre.*

Samuel. *Vous ne nous faites point trop attendre, nous ne faiſons que monter à cheval, vous venez tout à poinct.*

Phil. *Monſieur Henry maniez ce cheval un peu doucement, car il eſt un peu chatonilleux à la pointe, & eſt pour mettre ſon homme par terre.*

Sam. *O que voicy un cheval qui ſecouë bien ſon homme, il me caſſera*

Phil. I know by the ſunne, it is paſt eight a clocke.

Henry. God ſave you Gentlemen, and all the company.

Doctor. And you alſo maſter Henry.

Phil. God give you good morrow maſter Doctor, and all your company; wee are very ſorry wee make you tarrie ſo long.

Sam. You make us not tarrie over long ſir, wee are but new got on horſe-backe, you come in very good time.

Phil. Maſter Henry, manage that horſe ſomewhat gently, for hee is a little quicke on the ſpurre, and will doe his beſt to caſt his rider.

Sam. O that here is a horſe ſhakes a man vildlie, hee will breake

tous les os.

Hen. *Quelle ſelle avez-vous là? je penſe que c'eſt un baſt.*

Sam. *Il ne s'en fault gueres; car il n'y a point de poitral, & la croupiere eſtoit deſcouſuë, mais je l'ay raccouſtree avec une eſguillette.*

Hen. *Deça Meſſieurs, deça, tournons à gauche, afin d'eviter ceſte fange, & tenons ce petit ſentier, qui eſt plaiſant & aiſé.*

Phil. *Non, non, il n'y a rien meilleur ni plus ſeur que le grand chemin: car nous perdrons noſtre compagnie par ces chemins eſgarez, principalement parce que ce chemin (ſi bien je m'en ſouviens) eſt fort tortu & mal aiſé à tenir.*

Sam. *Voicy un cheval qui brunche à chaſque pas, il choperoit*

all my bones.

Hen. What a ſaddle have you there? I thinke it is a pack-ſaddle.

Sam. It is but little better; for there is no petrell, and the crupper was unſowed, but I have mended it with a point.

Hen. This way, Gentlemen, let us turne on the left hand, to ſhunne that dirt, and let us keepe this path, which is pleaſant and eaſie.

Philip. No, no, there is nothing better nor ſafer, then to keepe the common road-way; for in theſe by-wayes wee may loſe our companie, eſpecially ſeeing this way (if I remember well) is very crooked and hard to keepe.

Sam. Here is a horſe that ſtumbleth at every ſteppe, he would ſtumble

à un festu. Monsieur le Docteur, arrestez un peu, jusques à ce que le mareschal aye ferré vostre haquenee, qui a perdu le fer du pied droit.

Doct. *Mon amy, ferrez bien mon cheval: combien y-a il d'icy à Londres?*

Le Mareschal. *Sept lieuës & demie, ou quinze mil.*

Doct. *Quel chemin faut-il tenir?*

Le Mareschal. *Suivez tousiours le grand chemin sans vous fourvoyer ny a dextre ni à senestre.*

Doct. *Sa, amenez-moy mon cheval: combien vous doy-je maintenant?*

Le Mares. *Cinq sols.*

Doct. *Les voilà. Allons messieurs.*

Phil. *Ie pense que nous sommes fourvoyez.*

at a straw. Master Doctor, stay a little, till the Smith have shodde your ambling nagge, which hath lost his right-foot shooe.

Doct. Friend, shooe my horse well: how farre is it hence to London?

The Smith. Seven leagues and an halfe, or fifteene miles.

Doctor. Which way must we keepe.

The Smith. Follow still the broad high-way, without swarving to the right hand, or to the left.

Doct. Come, bring me my horse, how much doe I owe you now?

The Smith. Five souz, that is sixpence, English.

Doct. There it is. Let us goe Gentlemen.

Phil. I thinke wee are out of our way.

Doct.

Doct. *Mon ami, où eſt le plus court chemin d'icy à Londres?*

Sam. *Il ne vous entend point, il eſt ſourd.*

Hen. *Ho, bon-homme, par où va-on à Londres?*

Le paiſan. *Par icy Meſſieurs, vous avez failli: deſtournez vos chevaux à ces deux chemins, & ſuivez celuy du long de la riviere, il vous menera tout droit ſans faillir, & n'en y a point d'autre juſques à un vieil-cheſne, de là tournez vous tout court à ceſte main.*

Hen. *Nous vous remercions.*

Le paiſ. *Dieu vous conduiſe.*

Phil. *Nous voici pres de la ville.*

Henry. *Nous ſommes arrivez bien à temps: Ou logez vous Monſieur le Docteur?*

Doct. Friend, which is the neareſt way from hence to London?

Sam. Hee heares you not, he is deafe.

Henry. Ho, honeſt man, which way goe we to London?

Countriman. This way Gentlemen, you have failed: turne your horſes to theſe two wayes, and follow that which is along the river, it will bring you ſtraight on without failing, and there is no other way till you come to an old oake, there turne ſuddenly on this hand.

Henry. Wee thanke you.

Countr. God be your guide.

Phil. Now wee draw neere to the Citie.

Hen. We are come in good time: where doe you lodge Maſter

Docteur?

Doct. *Au cigne noir la ruë d'holbourn.*

Phil. *Et nous pareillement, car c'est une hostelerie, où l'on est fort bien traicté.*

Sam. *Par icy Messieurs, où allez-vous?*

Phil. *Il est vray, c'est le plus court chemin.*

L'hoste. *Vous estes les bien venus Messieurs, & toute l'honorable compagnie.*

Doct. *Grand merci mon hoste.*

Phil. *Où est le Palefrenier?*

L'hoste. *Appelez-le.*

Doct. *Tenez mon cheval, promenez-le, mais ne le dessellez point encores*

Phil. *Menez-les boire, & faites-leur bonne littiere.*

Le Palefrenier. *N'en ayez pas peur Messieurs,*

Doctor?

Doct. At the blacke swan in Holborne.

Phil. And wee likewise, for it is an Inne, where men are very well used.

Sam. This way Gentlemen, whither goe you?

Phil. It is true, this is the neerer way.

The Inne-keeper. You are welcome Gentlemen, and all your good companie.

Doctor. Grammercie mine hoste.

Phil. Where is the Ostler?

Host. Call him.

Doctor. Hold my horse, walke him, but doe not unsaddle him yet.

Phil. Lead them to water, and make them good litter.

The Ostler. Feare yee not Gentlemen,

je

je les penseray bien.

Hen. *Escoutez, donnez leur de bon foin, & de bonne avoine.*

Le Palef. *Ils n'auront faute de rien*

Phil. *Chambellan, monstrez-nous nos chambres.*

Doct. *Où est nostre hostesse?*

Hen. *Mon hostesse, qu'avons-nous à Souper?*

Hostes. *Descendez en la cuisine s'il vous plaist, pour y voir.*

Sam. *Laissez m'en la charge Messieurs, j'y pourvoirray.*

Phil. *Et bien, Monsieur Henry, vous & moy irons nous promener en la ville, en attendant que le souper s'appreste.*

Hen. *Ie le veux de bon cœur: car aussi bien me faut-il acheter plusieurs choses dont j'ay besoing.*

Phil. *Allons donc.*

I will dresse them wel

Hen. Doe you heare give them good hay and good oates.

The Ostler. They shal want nothing.

Phil. Chamberlaine shew us our chamber

Doct. Where is our hostesse?

Hen. Hostesse, what have we to supper?

Hostes. Come downe into the kitchin sir, I pray you and see.

Sam. Gentlemen, leave the charge of that to me, I will provide for it.

Phil. Well master Henry, you and I will goe walke into the Citie whilest supper is making ready.

Hen. With all my heart sir: for I must buy many things too that I have need of.

Phil. Let us goe then.

La

La Lingere. *Meſſi-rs, que vous plaiſt-il? oudriez vous aucunes elles toilles? vous plaiſt- acheter de chemiſes, de aiſes, de rabats, de mou-oirs, de bonnets de nuict, e chauſſes à botter, de auſſons, ou quelque au-e choſe que nous ayons?*

Phil. *Entrons en ceſte utique.*

Le Mercier. *Que vous laiſt il voir Monſieur?*

Phil. *Monſtrez-moy meilleur ſatin que vous ez.*

Le Mer. *De quelle uleur vous en plaiſt-il? De quelle couleur en de-andez-vous? de noir, blanc, de verd, de uge, de jaune, de bleu, bleu celeſte, de pourpre, ndré, orengé, violet, angeant, &c.*

Phil. *I'en veux voir noir.*

Le Merc. *Voila une*

The Seamſter. What lacke yee Gentlemen? would you have any good linnen cloth? will it pleaſe you buy ſome ſhirts, ruffe bands, falling bands, handkerchefs, night-caps, boothoſe, ſocks, or any thing elſe that we have?

Phil. Let us goe into this ſhop.

The Mercer. What will you pleaſe to ſee ſir?

Phil. Shew mee the beſt ſattin that you have.

The Mer. Of what colour will it pleaſe you have it? what colour doe you demand? black, white, greene, red, yellow, blew, watchet, purple, aſh-colour, orenge-colour, violet, changeable, &c.

Phil. I would ſee ſome blacke.

The Merc. There is a

piece

piece du meilleur ſatin qui ſoit dans ceſte ville, il eſt plain de ſoye, & la couleur en eſt belle.

Phil. *N'eſt il point gommé? que faites vous l'aulne de ce ſatin? ne me le ſurfaites pas, & j'en prendray dix aulnes.*

Le Mer. *Ne voulez-vous qu'un mot? vous en payerez dixſept ſchelins l'aulne.*

Phil. *C'eſt trop, vous eſtes trop cher.*

Le Mer. *Combien vous en plaiſt-il bailler?*

Phil. *Ie vous en bailleray ſept francs, ce ſont quatorze ſchelins.*

Le Mer. *Il me reuient à plus que vous ne m'offrez: Ie ne le ſçaurroye vendre à tel prix, j'y perdrois.*

Phil. *Vous plaiſt-il me le donner? Ie vous en bailleray dix ſols, ou un ſchelin d'auantage.*

piece of the beſt ſa
that is in this Citie,
full of ſilke, and the
lour of it is faire.

Phil. Is it not gu
med? how ſell you
ell of this ſatin? doe n
overpriſe it unto me,
I will take ten ells of

The Mer. Will yo
have but one word
you ſhall pay for it
venteen ſhillings thee

Phil. It is too dea
you are too deare.

The Mer. What w
it pleaſe you to give?

Phil. I will give yo
for it ſeven franks, th
is, fourteene ſhillings.

The Mer. It ſtands m
in more then you of
mee: I cannot ſell it f
that price, I ſhould lo
by it.

Phil. Shall I have
I will give you ten
ſouz, or one ſhilli
more.

The M

Le Mer. *C'eſt trop peu ...tes : il m'en couſte d'a...ntage : prenez le pour ...ize ſchelins.*

Phil. *Ie n'en donneray ...n plus, regardez ſi vous ...voulez.*

Hen. *Avez-vous de ...n drap d'or?*

Le Mer. *Ouy Monſi...r, d'auſſi bon que s'en ...nt trouver.*

Hen. *Que je voye : ...onſtre m'en de meilleur, ...vous en avez.*

Le Mer. *Vous n'en ...auriez trouver de meil...eur.*

Hen. *Combien vendez ...ous la verge de ceſtuy-là?*

Le Mercer. *Vous n'en ...erez que cinq eſcus, ou ...inze francs, ou trente ...helins la verge.*

Hen. *Ie ne veux point ...ceſtuy-là : combien ven...vous l'aune de ceſtuy-...?*

Phil. *Ie ne bailleray*

The Mer. It is too little truly; it coſt mee more : take it for ſixteene ſhillings.

Phil. I will give no more, ſee if you will take it.

Hen. Have you any good cloth of gold?

The Mer. Yes ſir, as good as any can bee found.

Hen. Let me ſee it, ſhew me ſome better, if you have any.

The Mercer. You can finde no better ſir.

Hen. How ſell you that ſame the yard?

The Mer. You ſhall pay me for it but five crowns, or 15. frankes, or 30. ſhilling, the yard.

Henry. I will none of that, how ſell you the yarde of this?

Phil. I will not give

pas une eſpingle d'avantage que ſept francs & quinze ſols, ce ſont quinze ſchelins & demi, choiſiſſez ſi vous voulez prendre mon argent, ou non: ne me chaſſez point ailleurs, vous n'en aurez pas un denier plus de moy, car j'en ay desja trop offert.

Le Mer. *Il me fait mal de vous eſconduire, encores que je n'y gaigne rien: vous l'aurez en eſperance que vous achepterez de nous, quand vous en aurez beſoing. Orſus, combien vous en plaiſt-il? combien vous en plaiſt-il d'aulnes?*

Phil. *Sept aulnes & demie & demi quartier.*

Le Mer. *Le tout revient à cinq livres, dixhuict ſchelins, deux deniers & un fardin, ou le quart d'un*

a pin more then ſeven franks & fifteene ſouz, that is, fifteene ſhillings and ſix pence, choose you whether you will take my money or no: Do not drive mee to another place, you ſhall not have one penie more of me, for I have offred too much already.

The Mer. I am loth to denie you, though I get nothing by it: you ſhall have it in hope you will buy of us when you ſhall have need. Go to, how much will it pleaſe you have? how many ells would you have?

Phil. Seaven ells and an halfe, and halfe a quarter.

The Mer. That commeth all to five pounds eighteene ſhillings two pence farthing

denier

denier sterlin; ou en monnoye de France, à cinquante neuf livres, un sol, dix deniers & maille.

Phil. *Bien, mesurez-le, & faites bonne mesure. Tenez, voila vostre argent, contez le.*

Le Mer. *Ie vous prie, changez-moy ceste piece d'or, qui n'est pas de poids, elle est legere de six grains.*

Phil. *En voila d'autres, prenez-en vostre chois, puis rendez moy mon reste.*

Le Mer. *Ie les veux peser: je prendray ceste-cy, voila vostre reste.*

Phil. *Et bien, estes vous content? estes vous payé?*

Le Mer. *Ouy Monsieur, je vous remercie treshhumblement: croyez que vous avez bien fait vostre emploite. Ne vous*

starling, or in French money to fiftie nine livers, one souz, tenne deniers and halfe penie.

Phil. Well, measure it, and make good measure, Hold, there is your money, tell it.

The Mer. I pray you change me this peece of gold, which is not weight, it wanteth sixe graines.

Phil. There bee others, take your choice of them, and then give me the rest againe.

The Mer. I will weigh them: I will take this same, there is your rest.

Phil. Well, are you contented? are you paid?

The Mer. Yes sir, I most humbly thanke you: beleeve mee you have bestowed your money well. Want you

faut-il point de veloux, de veloux à rammage, de taffetas; de taffetas velouté? vous plaiſt-il point acheter de damas, de camelot ondoyé, ou ſans onde, de fuſtaine de Milan, &c.

Phil. *Non pas pour ceſte fois.*

Le Mer. *N'eſpargnez choſe qui ſoit ceans: tout eſt à voſtre commandement.*

Phil. *Ie vous remercie. Adieu Monſieur.*

Le Mer. *Dieu vous doint bonne vie & longue Meſſieurs.*

L'orfevre. *Meſſieurs vous plaiſt-il acheter des bagues? voudriez vous voir une belle chaine d'or, un beau carcan, des groſſes perles orientales, un bon diamant, une belle eſmeraulde, ou quelques autres pierreries?*

Phil. *Allons mainte-*

no velvet, branced velver, taffeta, tuft-taffeta? will it pleaſe you buy any damaske, chamlet watered or unwatered, Millan fuſtian, &c.

Phil. No, not at this time.

The Mer. Spare nothing that wee have, all is at your command.

Phil. I thanke you. Fare you well ſir.

The Mer. God bee with you Gentlemen.

The Gold-ſmith. Gentlemen, will it pleaſe you buy any rings, or jewels? will you ſee a faire chaine of gold, a faire carkanet, great orientall pearles, a good Diamond, a faire Emeralde, or any other precious ſtones?

Phil. Let us goe now

nan

ent chez le Drapier.

Le Drapier. *Que demandez vous Meſſieurs? Ne vous faut il point de bon carizé, de la friſade, de drap, de bonne eſcarlate?*

Phil. *Que ie voye une bonne piece de drap.*

Hen. *I'iray ce pendant en ceſte autre bouſtique pour acheter de la ſoye, du paſſement d'or & d'argent, des rubens de ſoye, & des eſguillettes.*

Phil. *Comme il vous plaira.*

Hen. *Et bien, avez acheté tout ce qu'il vous faut?*

Phil. *Nenni pas encore: Il me faut avoir un chapeau, une ceinture, de bas d'eſtame, de bas de ſoye, une paire de gands, & de pendants d'eſpee.*

Hen. *Remettez-le à une autre fois: car je*

to the Drapers.

The Draper. What lacke yee Gentlemen? Want you no good kerſie, bayes, cloth, good Skarlet?

Phil. Let me ſee a good peece of cloth.

Hen. I will goe in the meane time into this other ſhop for to buy ſome ſilke, ſome gold and ſilver lace, ſilke rebands, and ſome points.

Phil. As you pleaſe ſir.

Hen. Well, have you bought all that you need?

Phil. No, not yet: I muſt have a hat, a girdle, a paire of worſted ſtockings, a paire of ſilke ſtockings, a paire of gloves, and ſword-hangers.

Hen. Put it off till another time; for I

voy qu'il est tarde.

Phil. *Allons donc, retournons nous en.*

Hen. *Ça mon ami, ostez mes esperons, & tirez mes bottes.*

Phil. *Où est mon serviteur?*

Le Serv. *Me voicy Monsieur. Que vous plaist-il?*

Phil. *Allez-moy querir le tailleur, afin qu'il prenne ces estoffes pour m'en faire un manteau, un pourpoint & un haut-de-chausses.*

Hen. *Et dites au cordonnier, qui demure au bout de la rue, qu'il m'apporte une paire de bottes de marroquin blanc, & une paire de soulliers de marroquin noir.*

Phil. *Qu'il m'apporte aussi des mules, des estarpins, & des pantoufles.*

Le Ser. *Bien Monsieur j'y vay.*

see it is late.

Phil. Let us goe then; let us returne.

Hen. Here friend, come take off my spurs and pull off my bootes.

Phil. Where is my man?

Servant. Here sir, what is your pleasure?

Phil. Goe fetch me the Taylor, that he may take away these stuffes for to make me a cloak, a doublet, and a paire of breeches.

Hen. And bid the shooemaker, that dwels at the streets end, bring mee a paire of white Spanish-leather bootes, and a paire of blacke spanish-leather shooes.

Phil. Let him bring me also some pantofles, pompes, & slippers.

Serv. Well sir, I goe.

L'Hoste.

L'Hoste. *Messieurs, la viande se gaste, & la compagnie vous attend, vous plaist-il venir soupper?*

Phil. *Trasvolontiers, mon hoste.*

Doct. *Ça Messieurs lavons.*

Phil. *Verser à la ronde.*

L'hoste. *Seez vous Messieurs, Monsieur le Docteur, prenez s'il vous plaist ce haut bout.*

Hen. *Monsieur Philippes mettez-vous, je m'assieray de l'autre costé.*

Doct. *Benissons la table; Pater celeste, &c.*

Phil. *Monsieur Samuel, vous plaist-il de ce gigot de mouton?*

L'Hoste. *Ostez ce bouilli, & approchez ces lapins, ce chapon rosti, & ces beccasses.*

Philip. *Mon hoste,*

The Hoste. Gentlemen the meat marreth, and the companie stayes for you, will it please you come to supper?

Phil. Very willingly mine hoste.

Doct. Come Gentlemen let us wash.

Phil. Poure round.

The hoste. Sit ye downe Gentlemen: Master Doctor, take I pray you this upper end.

Hen. Sit downe master Philip; I will sit on the other side.

Doct. Let us blesse the boord: O heavenly Father, *&c.*

Phil. Master Samuel, will you have any of this leg of mutton?

The hoste. Take away this boild meat, and set neerer those rebats, that rosted capon, and those Woodcocks.

Philip. Mine hoste,

descompez s'il vous plaist ce chapon-là.

L'hoste. *Ie boyray un coup avant que l'entamer: Ie salue vos bonnes graces Monsieur le Docteur, & celles de tout la compagnie.*

Doct. *Dieu le vous benisse mon hoste.*

L'hoste. *Messieurs, je vous supplie faire bonne chere & estre joyeux.*

Phil. *Monsieur vous plaist il l'aisle ou la cuisse? vous serviray-je monsieur?*

Sam. *Ie vous baisa la main monsieur.*

L'hoste. *Messieurs, je ne vous donne rien, vous en prendrez là où il vous plaira.*

Doct. *Chascun cerchera ses appetits: celuy à qui on donne, ne choisit pas. Versez-moy à boire en ce verre; il me faut boire à monsieur Philippes, & à Monsieur Henry.*

cut up that Capon pray you.

The Host. I will drink once before I cut it up: I drinke to you master Doctor, and to all the good companie.

Doct. Much good may it do you mine host.

The Host. Gentlemen, I pray you eate and be merrie.

P. Sir, will it please you have the wing or the leg? shall I help you sir?

Sam. I kisse your hand sir.

The Host. Gentlemen I doe not carve to you, you shall take where you please.

Doct. Let every one take what likes his appetite best: he that hath it given him, chooseth not. Fill me some drink in that glasse: I must drinke to Mr. Philip, and to master Henry.

Le

Le Ser. *Du-quel vous plaist-il Monsieur?*

Doct. *Du clairet.*

Le S. *En voyla Monsieur.*

Doct. *Or-ça Messieurs à vostre santé.*

Phil. *Pron face Monsieur le Docteur.*

Hen. *Monsieur je vous baise les mains, je vous pleigeray icy.*

L'hoste. *Or-çà enfans, ostez ces viandes, & apportez le desert.*

Hen. *Monsieur, nostre hoste, où est nostre hostesse, qu'elle ne nous vint tenir compagnie?*

L'hoste. *Vous l'excuserez pour ce soir s'il vous plaist, demain elle recompensera le tort qu'elle vous auroit fait par son absence.*

Doct. *Qu'on oste la table, & rendons graces à Dieu: nous te rendons graces Dieu tres benin, &c.*

Serv. Which will you please to drinke of sir?

Doc. some claret wine.

Ser. There is some sir.

Doc. Here Gentlemen, to your good health.

Phil. Much good do it you master Doctor.

Hen. Sir I thanke you, I will pledge you here.

The Ho. Come fellows take away these meats, and bring us the fruit.

H. Mine host, where is our hostesse, that she came not to beare us companie?

The Host. I pray you excuse her for this night, to morrow shee shall recompence the wrong she done you now by her absence.

Doct. Take away the table, & let us give God thanks. Wee give thee thankes most gracious God, *&c.*

Dialogue deuxiesme.

Des exercises de la Noblesse.

DV Sens. *Il faut que les exercices auxquels on dresse une noble jeunesse, ayent deux fins, assçavoir pour la rendre capable de servir au public, puis pour s'en sçavoir preualoir elle mesme, tant pour l'esgard de la recreation de l'esprit, que pour la santé, & agilité du corps. Et le premier exercice, au quel j'estime qu'un Gentil-homme se doit a donner, c'est a danser.*

Louis. *Ie le desireroy tout jeune, car ces grands corps, qui sont a l'aage de vingt ans, sont*

The second Dialogue.

Of the exercises of Nobility and Gentrie.

Wit. The exercise in which the young Nobility are trained must have these two ends, namely to make them capable for imployment in the common weale, and also to bee able to make use of them themselves, as well for regard of the recreation of the minde, as for the health and agility of the body. And the first exercise, which I thinke a Gentleman ought to give himselfe unto, is dancing.

Lewis. I would have him begin young, for these great bodies, which are about twentie, are

roides & lourds, qu'à grand peine le sçaura-on dresser: mais si de bonne heure il y met son estude, il prendra telle habitude de bien porter son corps qu'il trouvera puis apres un mouvement de ses membres plus gay, leger, & libre.

Le Grave. *Ie trouve cet exercise trop ridicule. & croy qu'il a esté inventé par des yvrongnes, lesquels eschauffez de la fumee du vin, estoyent esguillonnez à tels goffes & impertinents souts & mouvemens.*

Du Sens. *L'abus ne doibt pourtant oster l'usage des choses; quand le Gentilhomme apprend de jeunesse à bien porter ses membres, il est puis apres plus adroit au maniement*

so stiffe, & unweldy, that they can very hardly bee framed to it: but if betimes he apply himselfe to it, hee will take such a habitude of comely cariage of his bodie, that hee will afterwards finde a more lively, light, and free moving of his members.

M. Grave. I hold this exercise too ridiculous, and am perswaded it was invented by drunkards, who being heated with the fume of the wine, were stirred up to such foppish and unfit leapings and motions.

M. Wit. Yet for all that, the abuse of a thing ought not take away the use thereof: when a Gentleman learnes from his youth to carrie his limbes well, he is afterward the apter for the handling

d'une

d'une eſpée, & port des armes: & toutesfois ne deſire-ie que le Gentilhomme ſoit par trop ambitieux de ſçavoir ſi à fond la ſcience des pieds de ſon maiſtre, mais bien pluſtoſt qu'il ſoit curieux de l'imiter en ſa bonne grace.

Lou. *Il faut qu'un Courtiſan ſoit pourveu de telles partier, qui le puiſſent recommender, & orner, & vous ſçavez qu'il n'y a aucun exercice qui le puiſſe plus faire paroiſtre, & luy donner plus d'accez aux bonnes compagnies que la danſe; car de demeurer planté contre la tapiſſerie d'une ſale, comme un ſonge creux, & n'oſer accepter une danſe qui vous ſera preſentée, il me ſemble que cela eſt plus propre à un valet de chambre*

of a ſword, and bear of armes: and yet I wou not have a Gentleman too ambitiouſly deſire to know ſo exactly th foot-skill of his teache but I wiſh hee ſhould r ther bee curious to im tate him in his grace-fu cariage.

Lew. A Courtier mu bee furniſhed with ſuch qualities, as may com- mend and adorne him and you know that ther is not any exerciſe tha can more ſet him forth and give him freer ac- ceſſe into good compa nies, then dancing; for to ſtand ſtocke ſtill a gainſt the hangings of roome, like a dreamin gull, and not to dar to accept a dance whe it is offered, ſee meth rather to bee fit ter for a Groome o the chamber then for

qu'

d'un Gentilhomme.

Du Sens. *Ie trouve le jeu de paume aussi fort seant à un Gentilhomme : car outre le plaisir qu'il y prend, entretient il sa santé. Quant aux eschets & tablier, ie les trouve plus propres à un veillard, qu'à un jeune Gentilhomme, qui en son jeu ne doibt demeurer assis sus une escabelle : & outre cela, en procede une autre inconvenient, c'est que les jeux estans tous inventez pour la recreation, & pour effacer la tristesse, de ceux cy ne peut proceder que melancholie & chagrin, pour estre difficiles & fascheux à iouer.*

Louis. *Ie tiens pour le jeu de cartes & dez une c'est rusticité & lourdise qu'un Gentil-*

a Gentleman.

M. Wit. I hold also tennise play to be very seemly for a Gentleman : for besides the pleasure hee may take therein, he shall therby also maintaine his health. As for Chesse, and table-play I hold them fitter for an old man, then for a young Gentleman, who in his play should not remaine sitting on a stoole : and besides, there proceedeth another inconvenience of it, namely, that whereas playes were all invented for recreation, and for to put away sadnesse, from these same comes nothing but melancholie and pensivenesse, for that they are difficult and troublesome to play.

Lew. As for dice and card-playing, I hold it a clownishnesse, and blockishnesse for a Gentleman

homme

homme l'ignore.

Le Grave. *Ie seroy d'advis qu'il ne sceust que c'est que de dez, ou de cartes, car cela incite à l'avarice ou prodigalité, & l'enflamme à faire des querelles, que sont puis apres difficiles à dessmesler.*

Du Serris. *Monsieur, il y a bien de la distinction entre un jeu, & le mauvais usage où on le rapporte; c'est honneur de sçavoir par fois jouër à ces jeux, & qui donnent de l'entree, & fait prendre privauté en la maison des grands, car ils aiment volontiers ceux qui les accompagnent aux exercices, où ils se delectent. Faisons donc des limites un jeu, & ne les outre passons point, & nous n'acquerrons*

to bee ignorant in the

M. Gr. And my opini on is, that hee should no know what belongs to dice, or cardes, for that i stirreth up to coveteous nesse or prodigalitie, and enflameth men to quar rels, which can hard ly afterwards bee paci fied.

M. Wit. Sir, there is some difference betweene a play or game, and the evill use whereunto it is put: it is a credite some times to be able to play at these games, being meanes of entrance, and of growing into familia ritie in the houses of great men, for they commonly love such as beare them companie at the exercises, wherein they delight. Let us then set limites unto play, and transgresse not those bounds, so shall wee not purchase any

point

...t de blasme, honte ... mespris. Ie ne dis ...il faille jouër, mais ...n qu'on peut jouër ...s en faire mestier, ...ssi n'y a il rien de ...us honteux & mes...rise, & qui sente ...oins son enfant de bon ...eu, qu'un joueur & ...rlandier, qu'en a ac...uis le nom.

blame, shame and contempt. I say not that one must needs play, but that he may play, without making a trade of it, and indeed there is nothing more shamefull and contemptuous, and which savoureth lesse of noble breeding, than to be and have gotten the name of a common gamester, and hunter of dicing houses.

Le Grave. *Mais quand un violent & ardent desir de gaigner vous enflamme, ou la colere d'avoir perdu, est-ce un jeu, un exercice, un passe temps? n'est-ce pas plustost une passion, fureur & frenaisie?*

M.Gr. But when men are enflamed with a violent and ardent desire of winning, or with choler for having lost, is it then a play, an exercise, or a pastime? is it not rather a passion, a furie and a madnesse?

Du Sens. *Là où cette avarice & convoitise de l'argent d'autruy, commence à gaigner un jeune homme, & le met hors de soy,*

M.Wit. When as that greedie desire and covetousnesse of other mens money beginneth to prevaile over a young man, and to transport him so

qu'il

qu'il trepigne, qu'il jure, blaſpheme, maugree, il n'en faut plus donner le blaſme aux dez ou aux cartes, & dire que c'eſt le diable qui les a inventez, parce qu'en portant un tel vice ſur ſoy, il pourra auſſi bien faire paroiſtre ſa paſſion à la paulme qu'en ce jeu. Partant, il ne faut pas blaſmer le jeu, mais l'excés, l'aigreur, l'opiniaſtreté & la mauvaiſe fin où on l'attache. Auſſi ne s'y faut-il point tant opiniaſtrer, tant pour euiter diſſention, que d'autres inconveniens que le jeu enfante: car un Gentilhomme qui ne s'en corrige, s'y appauvrira comme un gueux, & y ſervira puis apres de fable & de jouët du monde; car quoy qu'on luy

far from himſelfe that ſtampeth, that he ſwea blaſpheme th and curſe we muſt no more bla the dice or cards, a ſay the divell invent them; for as much as c rying ſuch a vice abo him, he may as well mak his paſſion appeare at th Tennis, as in this game The play therefore is no to be blamed, but the exceſſe thereof, the eagerneſſe, the obſtinacy, & the evill end that accompanies it. Neither muſt one be ſo obſtinately bent unto it, both to avoide diſſention, as alſo other inconveniences ariſing of play: for the Gentleman that will not correct himſelfe of this, will bring himſelfe to beggerie, and will then become the common talk and jeſting ſtocke of every man: for though they affoord him

donne

...e la moitie du ta-... tandis que son ar-...t dure, on ne le re-...noistra plus, l'ayant ...rdu.

Le Grave. *Laissons ... jeux là, & passons ...x plus serieux. Pour ... tirer des armes c'est ... exercice, qui ne ...ut estre appris si ...une que la danse, veu ...e la force y est plus ...quise.*

Louis. *Si est-ce ...'il ne faut pas laisser ...sser le dix ou douze ...s, sans mettre quel-...e fleuret à la main ...un Gentilhomme; car ...ien qu'il n'ait la force ... s'en servir, il s'ac-...oustume neantmoins ...avoir les armes belles, ... attendant qu'il les ...isse avoir bonnes tout ...semble.*

Du Sens. *Mais il ne*

his part of the carpet, whilest his money lasteth, yet that once lost, they will no more know him.

M.Grave. Let us leave these games, and passe to others more serious. For fencing or the handling and use of weapons, it is an exercise, which would not be learned so young as dancing, seeing that more strength is requisite to it.

Lew. Yet must wee not let 10. or 12. yeares of age passe over, without putting some foile into the hand of a young Gentleman; for though he have not strength enough to to use it, yet he may accustome himselfe, to have his armes faire, in the meane time, till hee may also have them good withall.

M.Wit. But it serveth

sert

ſert de rien au gracieux port & maniement des membres, ce que la danſe a de particulier, mais il eſt bien plus neceſſaire, car il n'eſt pas ſi aiſé de reparer les fautes qui ſe font à l'eſpee blanche, que de corriger celles qu'on commet en ſortant de cadence en un branſle : quand vous avez un coup d'eſtocade à travers les coſtes il ne faut plus dire, C'eſt à refaire.

Louis. *Vous en jugez fort bien. Auſſi le Gentilhomme doit eſtre vert, prompt & reſolu: les aſſauts avec ceux de ſa taille luy entretiennent la prattique des leçons de ſon maiſtre.*

Du Sens. *Encores n'eſt il pas bien ſeant qu'un Gentilhomme aye*

nothing to the grace carriage and ſtirring of limbes, as dancing particular doth; yet is farre more neceſſarie for it is not ſo eaſie matter to repaire the faults made with the naked ſword, as to amend ſuch as are committed in being out of cadence in a dance: when you ſhall have a thruſt through the ſides, it will bee to no purpoſe to ſay, Let us begin, it is but mending it.

Lew. You judge very well of it. Alſo the Gentleman ought to bee ſtrong, ready and reſolute: and the bickerings with others of his ſtature, ſhould maintaine his practice of the leſſons his maſter teacheth him.

Mwit. Yet is it not ſeemely, that a Gentleman ſhould have his face often

ſouvient

souvent la face meurtrie de coups de fleuret qui luy fait garder la chambre quelque jours, ou bien le retient d'aller veoir les compagnies en tel estat, partant ne suis-je d'avis, qu'il tire à toutes heures, ni avec toutes sortes de personnes.

battred with the blowes of a foile, so as to make him keepe his chamber some dayes, or keepe him from going to see the companies in that plight, therefore am I not of opinion, that hee should at all houres bee practising, nor with all sorts of persons.

Lou. *Si faut il qu'il s'exerce.*

Lew. Yet must he be exercised.

Du Seys. *Ie ne nie point, qu'il ne soit utile de s'exercer, mais quoy qu'un Gentilhomme doive apprendre ce qui se peut monstrer de cette science, si ne faut il qu'il en espere & attende son avantage, lequel ne luy doibt estre asseuré d'ailleurs que de la grandeur de son courage, qui ne luy fera apprehender ce que son ennemi en pourroit sçavoir plus que luy.*

M. Wit. I denie not, but that it is profitable to exercise himselfe; but though a Gentleman ought to learn that which may bee shewed him of this science, yet must hee not hope for and expect his advantage thereby, which ought to be assured unto him from no where else, but from the greatnes of his courage, wch shall make him not feare the skill that his enemie may haply have more then he.

Monſ. Sulli. *Ie deſireroy que noſtre diſcours fins nous tiraſſions un coup.*

Du Sens. *Monſieur à moy ne tiendra. Le monter à cheval eſt un exercice vrayement digne d'un enfant de bon lieu, mais n'eſtant pas une ſcience, qui s'apprenne en perfection en un an ou deux, je conſeille à celuy qui n'a ou le loiſir, ou le moyen d'en continuer l'apprentiſſage, qu'au moins le temps qu'il y employera ſoit tellement à ſon profit, qu'outre la belle aſſiette & ferme tenue qu'il y acquerra, il ſçache paſſablement bien faire faire à un cheval tout ce qui eſt le plus neceſſaire pour le ſervice de la guerre, aſçavoir courir la bague, & brider la*

Monſ. Sulli. I would faine when our diſcourſe is ended, we may have a bout at it.

Mr. Wit. Sir, there ſhall be no let in me. To ride a horſe is an exerciſe truly worthy of one nobly deſcended: but not being a ſcience, which is learned in perfection in a yeare or two, I counſel him which hath not either the leaſure, or meanes to continue his learning longer, that (at the leaſt) the time that hee ſhall imploy therein, bee ſo much to his profite, that beſides his comely ſitting, and firme hold which hee ſhall get, hee may indifferently well bee able to make his horſe doe all that which is moſt neceſſarie for the ſervice of the warre, to wit, to runne at the ring, to know the

potence,

entende, connaistre les marques des chevaux, toute sorte de poil, juger de leur bonté & tares, de l'aage, sçauoir les maladies ausquelles ils sont le plus subjects, & les remedes pour leur gueriſon.

Louis. *Cela ne suffit pour mettre un chevalier d'armes en campagne à tous essais, je veux qu'il sçache donner quarriere, voltiger en l'air, franchir le fossé, sauter le palis, court-tourner en un cercle, tant à dextre qu'à seneſtre, &c.*

Monſ. Sulli. *Le voltiger est aussi compris aux exercices neceſſaires, car il sauve quelquefois la vie à celuy qui se sçait jetter à propos dans la selle, ou sur la croupe d'un cheval, c'est ce qu'on y doit*

markes of horſes, all the ſortes of their colours, to judge of their goodneſſe and faultes, of their age, to know the diſeaſes unto which they are moſt ſubject, and the remedies fit for their cure.

Lew. That is not ſufficient for to fit a man at armes into the field at all aſſayes, I would have him have the skill to performe a carriere, to curvet aloft, to leape over a ditch, or over a pale, to turne ſhort in a circle, both to the right hand and to the left.

Monſ. Sul. Vaulting is alſo compriſed among the neceſſarie exerciſes, for ſometimes it ſaveth the life of him, which can fitly caſt himſelfe into the ſaddle, or on the crupper of a horſe; this is that which ought to bee

le plus apprendre.

Le Grave. *Que dites vous des Mathematiques? La science en est tresbelle, tresutile, & des plus necessaires à ceux qui veulent faire leur fortune dans les armes.*

Monſ.S. *C'est un Dedale, car elles ont tant de parties, que pour les apprendre une chascune à fond, il y faudroit dix vies d'homme.*

Le Grave. *Aussi n'est il de besoing que cela soit appris à fond.*

Du Sens. *Mais qui est la base & fondement de toutes les parties? n'est-ce pas l'Arithmetique?*

Le Grave. *Iustement; car elle traicte des nombres, qui sont les instrumens desquels on se sert pour exprimer les dimensions.*

learned by him moſt.

M.Gr. What say you of the Mathematicks? the knowledge therof is moſt commendable and moſt profitable, and one of the moſt neceſſarie for them that would make their fortunes in Armes.

Monſ.Sul. It is a Dedalus labyrinth, for it hath ſo many parts, that for to learne each of them to the full depth, would require tenne mens lives.

M.Grave. Neither is it needfull to be learned ſo, to the very depth thereof.

M.Wit. But what is the ground and foundation of all the parts? is it not Arithmeticke?

M. Grave. Right ſir, for that treateth of numbers, which are the inſtruments uſed to expreſſe dimenſions by.

Du

Du Sens. *Qu'est ce*
suit apres?
Le Gr. *La Cosmo-*
phie, en laquelle est
priſe la deſcription
ciel, qu'on dit Aſtro-
ie, & celle de la terre,
on dit Geographie.
Monſ.Su. *Ie trouve*
la Geographie aide
ucoup à celuy qui ſe
t advancer en l'eſtu-
d'hiſtoire; car elle a
de beau, qu'elle diſ-
rt de diverſes regi-
, nations, royaumes,
vinces, fleuves, de
rs, & autres choſes,
ſont à conſiderer en
ce grand corps &
rpris de l'univers.
n'euſſe jamais ſçeu
ien retenir & enten-
mon hiſtoire de
cidide, ſi je
ſſe adiouſté à la
ion d'iceluy, la
le de Grece, où
peu reconnoiſtre

M.Wit. What followeth after that?

M.Gr. Coſmographie, in which is comprehended the diſcription of the heaven, called Aſtrologie, and that of the earth, called Geographie.

Monſ Sul. I finde that Geographie helpeth much him that will forward himſelfe in the ſtudie of hiſtorie; for it hath this good in it, that it diſcourſeth of divers regions, nations, kingdomes, provinces, rivers, ſeas, and other things which are to be conſidered in all this great bodie and circuit of the univerſe. I could never have beene able ſo well to underſtand and remember my hiſtorie of Thucidides, if I had not added to the reading of the ſame, the Mappe of Greece, wherein I might know the

l'aſſiette des lieux, les mers, fleuves, ruiſſeaux, les journées que faiſoyent les Capitaines avec leurs armees, leurs approches, retirades, deſtours, en ſomme, il me ſembloit voir le tout à l'œil, & au vif, j'y ay peu apprendre pluſieurs ruſes & fineſſes, ſtratagemes, avantages, d'un parti ſur ſon ennemi, & autres petites obſervations, qui illuſtrent l'hiſtoire, & en eſclaiciſſent l'intelligence.

Du Sens. *Voila qui convient à un hiſtorien, & à un bon ſoldat, mais en particulier quelle partie eſt la plus neceſſaire à un homme d'armes?*

Le Grave. *C'eſt la Geometrie proprement, car elle luy apprend à meſurer la profondeur d'un foſſé, la hauteur*

ſituation of places, the ſeas, rivers, brookes, the journeys made by the Captaines with their armies, their approches, retyrings, turnings aſide, in a word, me thought I ſaw all with the eye, and to the life; I might learne thereby many ſubtilties and cunnings, ſtratagems, advantages of one parti over his enemie, and other ſmall obſervations which illuſtrate the hiſtory, and cleere the underſtanding of it.

M. Wit. All this agreeth well to an hiſtorian and to a good ſouldier but in particular which part is the moſt neceſſary for a man at armes?

M. Gr. That is Geometrie properly; for it teacheth him to meaſure the depth of a ditch, the height of a tower, the

une tour, l'estendue d'une compagne, en son eschole faut il apprendre la science de bien fortifier une place, de l'attaquer, de la defendre; elle l'instruict, comme il faut faire un retranchement, comme il faut loger une armee, comme on la range en bataille, quel ordre elle tient en marchant, quel devant une ville quel au lever d'un siege.

Du Sens. *Il faut non seulement avoir la connoissance & theorie de cela, mais il le faut aussi rapporter à la prattique, à l'œuvre & à l'action.*

Voila en gros tous les utiles & necessaires exercices, que je peux requerir en un Gentilhomme, il reste encores à parler de la chasse. Ie trouve la chasse estre

whole extent of a field; in her schoole must hee learne the science of well fortifying a place, how to assault it, how to defend it; shee instructeth him, how hee must make a Trench, how hee must lodge an armie, how to set it in battaile array, what order it must observe in marching, what before a Towne, and what at the raising of a Siege.

Wit. Hee must have not onely the knowledge and theorie of that, but must also bring the same unto practice, to operation, and to action.

Here are in generall all the profitable and necessarie exercises, that I can require in a Gentleman, it remaineth yet to speake of Hunting. I finde hunting to bee an exercise very fit for a Gentleman,

un exercice fort propre à un Gentilhomme, qui eſt deſia retiré en ſa maiſon, & ſur ſes biens; mais tel s'y paſſionne & agite avec tant d'excez, que vous ne l'oyez jamais parler que de ſes oiſeaux, ou chiens, rompant & ruinant tout pour ce ſeul plaiſir.

Louis. *Pour toutes vos raiſons, ne voudrois-je oſter à un Gentilhomme la chaſſe, quoy qu'il ne fuſt encore retiré en ſa maiſon.*

Du Sens. *Ie ne dis pas qu'il la luy faille oſter tout à fait, mais j'entens qu'il n'y doibt pas du tout employer ſon eſtude, & en faire meſtier ordinaire, au contraire je veux qu'il ſoit bien inſtruit à toute ſorte de chaſſe, pour en ſçavoir diſcourir en*

which is already retyred home to his houſe, and upon his meanes, but ſome are ſo paſſionately carried away with ſo much exceſſe herein, that you can heare them ſpeak of nothing elſe but of their Hawkes, or dogs, breaking downe and deſtroying all for this onely pleaſure.

Lew. Notwithſtanding all your reaſons, I would not debar a Gentleman from hunting, though he be not yet retired home to his houſe.

M Wit. I ſay not that hee ſhould bee debarred from it altogether, but my meaning is, that he ought not wholly employ his ſtudie in it, and make an ordinary occupation of it; yet on the contrary, I would have him bee well inſtructed in all ſort of hunting and hawking,

termes

termes propres, & n'eſtre veu ignorer ce qui eſt fort commun à ceux de ſa qualité.

Monſ. Sul. *Orça, veu que nous avons achevé la carriere de noſtre diſcours, Page apporte-icy les fleurets, & tirons un coup ou deux, Monſieur du Sens vous & moy.*

Du Sens. *Ie le veux bien: mais à quoy? à l'eſpee & poignard, ou à l'eſpee ſeule?*

Monſ. Sul. *A l'eſpee ſeule. Allons donc, mettez vous en garde.*

Louis. *Avancez-vous, battez du pied en frappant ſur le fleuret de voſtre homme, pouſſez & rabattez en vous retirant.*

Monſ. Sul. *Ay-je*

for to be able to diſcourſe of it in proper termes, and not to bee ſeene ignorant in that which is ſo very common to all them of his quality or degree.

Monſ. Sul. Come, ſeeing we have finiſhed the carreere of our diſcourſe, Page, bring hither the foiles, and let us play a bout or two, Maſter Wit, you and I.

M. Wit. With all my heart: but at what? at ſword and dagger, or at ſingle rapier?

Monſ. Sul. At ſingle rapier: Come then, put you upon your gard.

Lew. Step forwards ſir, beat your foote to the ground when you ſtrike on your fellowes foile, thruſt and beate backe in your retreat.

Monſ. Sul. Have I

bien

bien fait?

Louis. *vous n'eſtendez pas aſſez le bras, tenez le corps droit & le pied ferme.*

Du Sens. *Tenez, voila un beau coup d'eſtoc.*

Monſ. Sul. *Ho, je le tiens, je m'en vengeray. Tenez voilà un beau coup d'eſtrameçon.*

Du Sens. *Ie l'ay preſque paré trop tard.*

Lou. *Eſſayez à faire le feintes.*

Monſ. Sul. *Ho, me voila engagé.*

Louis. *Deſgagez-vous en paſſant voſtre fleuret par deſſus. Vous n'eſtez pas aſſeuré de voſtre coup, il le faut bien loger avant que le porter. Retirez vous & vous remettez en garde. Abordez & pouſſez ferme, ne levez ainſi le pied de derriere, car*

done well?

Lew. You ſtretch not out your arme enough, hold your bodie ſtraight, and your foot ſteady.

M. Wit. Hold, there is a faire thruſt.

M. Sul. Ho, I have it, I will be revenged. Hold, there is a faire downe-right blow.

M. Wit. I have almoſt warded it too late.

Lew. Trie to make your falſe proffers.

Monſ. Sul. Ha, now I am engaged.

Lew. Diſengage your ſelfe by paſſing your foyle underneath. You are not certaine of your thruſt, you muſt aime it well, before you give it. Withdraw your ſelfe, and put your ſelfe againe upon your gard. Approach, and thruſt firmely, lift not ſo up your hinder foot,

cela

cela vous emporte tout le corps, leve la main gauche, pour avoir du contrepoids: & bien, voilà une estocade, qui n'est pas mal portée.

Monſ. Sul. *Ie ſuis las.*

Du Sens. *Reposez vous.*

Monſ. Sul. *Allons, retirons nous.*

for that will ſway with it all the bodie, lift up your left hand, to have ſome counterpoiſe: well, there is a thruſt indifferent well carried.

Monſ. Sul. I am wearie.

M. Wit. Reſt you.

Monſ. Sul. Let us goe, let us withdraw our ſelves.

Dialogue troiſieſme.

Du Voyageur.

CAſannier. *Ie n'approuve point la perigrination : primierement pour ce que nous n'avons que faire de ſçavoir ce qui ſe fait ailleurs, ains avons aſſez à ſoigner, & nous occuper chez nous.*

Eudoxe. *Le circuit de la terre n'a il pas eſté fait pour le manoir & habitation de l'homme? pourquoy donc en debvrions nous ignorer les eſtres & parties? N'oſerons-nous pas aller admirer les œuvres divines & incomparables qui y ſont, pour en louër l'ouvrier?*

Caſ. *Mais de quoy*

The third Dialogue.

Of the Traveller.

CAſanner. I like not this travelling : firſt, becauſe we have nothing to doe to know what is done in other countries, but have enough to take care for, and to employ our ſelves in, at home.

Eudoxus. Was not the circuit of the earth made for the habitation and dwelling place of man? why then ſhould wee be ignorant of the paſſages and parts thereof? ſhall we not dare to goe to admire the divine and incomparable works which are thercin, for to give praiſe to the Workman?

Caſ. But what good

nous sert cela? quel fruict peut on tirer de la perigrination?

Eud. *La peregrination rend les hommes advisez, prudens & discrets, non seulement pour leur utilité, mais pour le bien du public.*

Cas. *On n'acquerra pas grand' prudence des mers, montagnes & bois.*

Curieux. *Ne sçavez vous pas les vers d'Homere, qui parlant d'Vlisse, qu'il propose au monde comme un patron d'un personnage caut & prudent, dit:*

Vlysse heureux je nomme, Qui de sçavoir pouvez,
A les mœurs de maint homme, Et mainte terre veu.

Cas. *Tout cela est bon: mais quand on*

doth that doe us? what fruit may we reape of travelling?

Eud. Travelling maketh men become wary, wise and discreet, not only for their owne profite, but also for the good of the Commonweale.

Cas. A man can get no great wisedome from seas, mountaines and woods.

Curius. Know you not the verses of Homer, who speaking of Vlisses (whom hee sets forth to the world as a patterne of a warie and prudent person) saith:

Vlisses, fraught with skill,
a happy man hath
beene.
Many mens manners he,
and many a land had
seene.

Cas. All that is good; but when a man con-

sait

fait un tel assemblage & bigarrure de mœurs, pour la plus part corrumpues, comme le monde est plus addonné au mal, qu'au bien, à quoy resemble un tel homme? de quel gouſt est il?

tracts in himselfe such a medley and diversitie of manners for the most part corrupt, as the world is more given to evill then to good, unto what doth such a man resemble? of what taste is he?

Eud. *Vn homme pour peu discret qu'il soit, sçaura discerner le bien du mal, & la vertu du vice, & s'il se rencontre par fois en mauvaise compagnie, il evitera neantmoins, toutes les occasions qui le pourroit faire chopper. Il luy faut faire comme les abeilles qui des fleurs, herbes & racines venimeuses tirent le meilleur suc & le convertissent en miel.*

Eud. A man, though not very discreet, may be able to discerne good from evill, and vertue from vice, and if sometimes hee chance into evill company, he shall nevertheless shunne all the occasions which might make him fall. Hee must doe as the honie-bees, who from flowers, hearbes, and rootes venimous, doe draw the best juice, and convert it into honie.

Cas. *Mais un jeune homme, qui n'a pas grand jugement, comment peut il discerner tout cela?*

Cas. But a young man, which hath no great judgement, how can hee discerne all that?

Eud.

Eud. *A ceux qui sont trop jeunes, ou despourveus de jugement, on leur donne de conducteurs, qui leur servent de conseilleurs.*

Cas. *Ne considerez vous pas d'autre part, les dangers ausquels se hasardent telles gens qui font voyages, & mais combien de travaux il leur faut supporter.*

Cur. *Pour les dangers, il les faut prevoir par prudence: mais si on en vouloit tousjours ainsi penser, & se laisser pouventer de tout ce qui pourroit advenir, on ne feroit jamais rien qui vaille; & quant aux travaux, vous sçavez qu'on ne peut cueillir la rose sans se picquer. Aide toy, Dieu t'aidera.*

Eud. Those which are too yoong and unfurnished of judgement, must have Guides given them, which may serve them for counsellers.

Cas. You consider not on the other side the dangers in which such as travell doe hazard themselues, and also how many labours they must endure.

Cur. As for the dangers, they must bee prevented by wisedome: and if a man should alwaies think on them, and suffer himselfe to be affrighted with all that might happen, hee should never doe any thing to any great purpose: and as for labours, you know, a man cannot gather the rose without pricking himselfe. Helpe thy selfe, and God will helpe thee.

Eud.

Caſ. *Mais que requerez vous en celuy qui veut dreſſer un voyage?*

Eud. *Il faut que le voyageant ait de l'age, environ vingt ans; qu'il ſoit accompagné de jugement, qu'il ſoit pourveu de ſçavoir, & bien verſé aux lettres & arts neceſſaires; qu'il ayt la connoiſſance des hiſtoires, & quelque bon & fondamental commencement de la langue du païs, où il veut aller; & finalement ſoit fourni d'argent à ſuffiſance. Et pource que tout ce que vous en avez de profit, eſt l'elegance des mœurs qui vous accompaignent, & la confirmation du jugement, pourtant faut-il qu'un jeune homme ſoit accompagné de quelque perſonne d'honneur, a-*

Caſ. But what requ
you in him that is to go
a voyage, or to tra
vell?

End. The traveller mu
have age, as about twen
tie; he muſt be accompa
nied with judgement
furniſhed with know
ledge, well ſeene in goo
literature, and in neceſſa
rie arts; he muſt have the
knowledge of hiſtories
and ſome good and fun
damentall beginning i
the language of the coun
trie, whither hee goeth
and laſtly, he muſt be ſuf
ficiently furniſht wit
money. And becauſe a
the profite you have i
the elegance of the man
ners which accompanie
you, and the confirmat
on of your judgement
it is meet a young m
ſhould bee accompanie
with ſome perſon of cr
dite, with ſo much pro

...tant de profit & utilité, que les diverses nations estrangeres, qu'il aura veues luy faisans le jugement, pour en rapporter non la fleur, non la fueille, mais bien le fruit tout meur & entier.

and utilitie, that the divers strange nations hee shall see, doe forme his judgement, that he may bring backe not the flower, nor the leaves, but the whole fruit ripe also.

Cal. Sont-ce là toutes les parties requises en qui veut peregriner?

Cas. Are these all the parts requisite in him that would travell?

Eud. Oui, mais j'ay outre cela une loy comprise en ces vers.

Donne à l'humilité son manoir dans ton cœur;
Fay que de son rideau ta face soit voilee.
Assiste à un chascun, à nul ne donne injureur
Ni nuisance; en ton fait sois soigneux, & ne bee,
Ou te mesle d'autruy, mais voy d'un œil prudent;
Et qui se fier as: ne plus

Eud. Yes, yet I have besides that a law comprehended in these verses;

Bee milde of countenance and meeke of minde;
Doe wrong to none, to all be good and kinde.
In thine owne businesse be thou diligent.
Deale not with other mens, lest thou repent;
And when thou trust's take heed, be ever warie;
Heare much, talke little,

petit pardonne
Supporte ton pareil, par douceur cede au grand
Ton secret tien secret, n'en fay part à personne
Sois bien bon escouteur, mais fort petit parleur.
Ayes un œil veillant, & sois sobre de bouche,
Veritable au parler, des bons prompt amateur,
Endure les meschans, quoy qu'ils soyent fort farouchez.
Mais sur tout crains Dieu, qui tout void & tout oit,
Et que fraude ne peut aucune tromperie.
Si tout cela tu fais, tres-seur en tout endroit
Converser tu pourras, mesmes en Barbarie.
Cal. Mais en fin,

keep thy secrets charie.
Inferiours spare, to betters yeeld their due,
Beare with thy equals, peace will so ensue.
Bee sober, watchfull, true, of promise sure;
Loving to good men, evill men endure.
Feare God aboue all things, whose eye perceive,
And eares heare all, no man can him deceive.
Thus amongst strangers maist thou safely be,
And liue secure in midst of Barbarie.
Cal. But at length

quel profit tirera-il d'avoir veu tant de villes, pais, maisons, hommes & bestes?

Eud. Ce n'est pas la seule difference d'un clocher à l'autre, que je destre qu'il aille remarquant en son voyage; & tout ainsi que le laissant chez luy entre les bras de sa grand'mere, il ne peut que croupir en une lourde & crasse ignorance, aussi quoy qu'on le remue de ville en ville, de pais en pais, il ne se faut pas promettre, qu'il en deviendra plus habille homme, si n'exerceant que ses yeux corporels à regarder les choses par le dehors, il ne les penetre, mesmes jusques aux entrailles des yeux de l'esprit.

Cas. Ce qui m'en a parci devant tant des-

what profite shall a man receave, by having seene so many Cities, countries, houses, men and beasts?

Eud. It is not the distance of one steeple from another, that I desire a man should go observing in his travell: and like as leaving him at home in his grandames armes, he cannot but settle in a clowniſh and grosse ignorance, so also though he be removed from citie to citie, from countrie to countrie, hee must not promise himselfe, to bee the more wise and able man, if exercising onely his bodily eyes in beholding things outwardly, he doe not withall pierce even into the bowels of thinges with the eyes of his minde.

Casan. That which hath heretofore so much

gouſté, c'a eſté que j'ay veu à la cour pluſieurs Gentils-hommes de ma connoiſſance, qui en tous leurs diſcours de leurs voyages d'Italie, ne font qu'admirer les Palais des Italiens, & racontent comme ils y ont appris le nom de toutes les Courtiſannes de Veniſe, & de Rome; & d'autres qui en leur voyage d'Allemaigne n'ont appris qu'a cognoiſtre la difference du vin de Rhin à celuy d'Orleans; que c'eſt que boire des ſantez, boire à la ronde, & autres telles baſi verneries.

distastednesse, was this, that I saw at court many Gentlemen of mine acquaintance, who in all their discourses of their voyages into Italie, doe nothing but admire the Palaces of the Italians, and tell how they have learned there the names of all the curtizans of Venice and of Rome; and others which in their voyage of Germany, have onely learned to know the difference betweene Rennish wine and Orleans wine, what it is to drinke healths, to drinke round, and other such gulleries.

Cur. *Ce n'eſt ici que nous demandons telles teſtes ſans cervelle, qui ne s'amuſent qu'à choſes baſſes viles, & communes.*

Cur. Wee require not for travellers such brainlesse heads as those, which onely busie themselves about base, vile, and common things.

Cal. *Comment voulez vous donc que le*

Cal. How would you have a Gentleman travell

Gentil-

Gentilhomme i'vojage, pour ſe prevaloir de ſa peregrination?

Eud. *Il y a deux points neceſſairement conſiderables au voyageant, qui conſiſtent à ſe prendre garde du corps & de l'ame des choſes.*

Caſ. *Qu'entendez-vous par le corps?*

Eud. *I'appelle le corps tout ce que l'œil peut veoir de plus remarquable, en une ville, en une Province, en une Royaume, comme ſont toutes ſortes d'edifices, comme Temples, Monaſteres, Chappelles, les Palais, hoſtels de ville, marchez, havres, ponts, ports, portes, murailles, fortereſſes, baſtions, hoſpitaux, hales, colleges, arſenals; les belles maiſons des Bourgeois, beau jardins, viviers, fon-*

for to benefite himſelfe by his peregrination?

Eud. Two points are neceſſarily conſiderable in a Traveller, namely, that hee take heed to the bodie, and to the ſoule of things.

Caſ. What meane you by the body?

Eud. I call the body all that which the eye may ſee moſt remarkable in a Citie, in a Province, in a Kingdome, as are all ſorts of buildings, as Temples or Churches, Monaſteries, Chappells, Palaces, Towne-houſes, market-places, havens, bridges, portes, gates, walls, fortreſſes, fortifications, hoſpitalls, Market-houſes, Colledges, Arcenalls; the faire houſes of the Burgeſſes, the faire gardens, fiſhponds, fountaines.

taines. Et en tout cela, il y faut aussi veoir & remarquer toutes les antiquitez, comme Amphitheatres, colomnes, Pyramides, statues, tombeaux, & ainsi s'enquerir de ce qu'il y a de plus rare à voir en un pais ou ville.

And in all this must you see and observe all the antiquities, as Amphithearers, Pillars, Pyramides, statues, tombes, and so enquire of that which is most rare to bee seene in a countrie or Citie.

Cur. *Voila quant au corps & à l'exterieur, il vous reste maintenant de traiter de l'interieur.*

Cur. So much for the body & outside of things, it resteth now you should intreat of the inward.

Eud. *L'ame consiste proprement à s'enquerre, si le païs ou la ville ou l'on se trouve sont regis & gouvernez en Monarchie, Aristocratie, ou Democratie. Et aussi vous vous enquerrez du temps de la fondation & du fondateur, & combien de races il y en a eu, & si l'estat a esté jadis autre qu'aujourdhuy; & si aujourd'huy il est electif ou*

Eud. The soule consisteth properly in informing your selfe, whether t e countrie or Citie bee governed by a Monarchicall, Aristocraticall, or Democraticall governement. And you shall also enquire of the time of the foundation and of the founder, and how many races or houses there hath beene, and if the state were other in times-past then now; & if now it be

hereditaire

hereditaire; vous pourrez par mesme moyen apprendre non seulement le nom antique & moderne, mais aussi vous informer des choses, qui dés la memoire des habitants s'y sont passées, pour vous inciter à rechercher l'histoire. Si c'est une Republique, vous orrez quels sont ses Seigneurs, en quel nombre ils sont, combien de temps ils exercent leur charge, quel ordre on tient en leur election, à qui c'est à la faire, de quelle qualité ils doivent estre, de quels privileges ils jouïssent, quelle authorité ils ont, Combien il y a des Conseils, & combien il y entre de Conseillers en chascun, combien de jurisdictions ou chambres de justice, quelles sont les subalternes, & quelles les

elective or hereditarie; you may by the same meanes learne not onely the ancient and moderne name, but also informe you of such things as since the memorie of the inhabitants have there passed, the better to stirre you up to search out the Historie. If it be a Common-wealth, you shall heare who are it Lords, how many in number they are, how long time they stay in their office, what order is held in their election, who are to make it, of what qualitie or condition they ought to be, what priviledges they enjoy, what authoritie they have; How many Councells there is, and how many Counsellours are in each of them, how many jurisdictions, or courts of Iustice; which are subordinate, & which

Souueraines, s'ils se ſeruent de droicts municipaux, ou eſtrangers.

Cur. *Tout cela concerne la police & gouuernement: mais quand direz vous des reuenus?*

Eud. *C'eſt le point où je paſſe maintenant: Ie veux donc que le voyageant s'enqueſte du reuenu ordinaire & annuel d'un eſtat, & en quoy il conſiſte, ſi c'eſt en domaine, en taille ou impoſts ſur les ſubjects, ou autres droicts: il faut auſſi ſçauoir ſi un tel eſtat peut plus en infanterie, qu'en cauallerie: Quels ſont ſes voiſins, ou alliez, s'ils ſubſiſtent d'eux meſmes, ou s'ils ſont ſoubs la protection d'autruy; en quoy cet eſtat & ſes voiſins peut plus pour la guerre; ſi c'eſt en mer ou*

Soueraigne, if they uſe lawes municipall or forraine.

Cur. All this concerneth the policie and gouernment, but what will you ſpeake of the reuenues?

Eud. I paſſe to that point now. I would haue then the traueller make inquirie of the ordinarie and yearely reuenue of a State, & wherin it conſiſteth, if it be in demeaſnes in taxes or impoſts on the ſubjects, or other Rights: hee muſt alſo know if ſuch a State bee more powerfull in Foote or in Horſe: what are it neighbours or confederates, whether they ſubſiſt of themſelues, or bee under the protection of another, in what conſiſts the power of this State and its neighbours for the warre; if it be by ſea or

en terre, & pour cet esgard faut sçavoir l'assiette d'un tel lieu, &c.

Cur. *Il seroit aussi besoing de sçavoir tous les ports; quels les plus forts, & quels les moindres; s'il y a garnison, & si le peuple du païs est addroit aux armes; combien de vaisseaux ils peuvent armer; quelle sorte, si ce sont galeres ou navires.*

Eud. *Il faut aussi sçavoir quels sont leurs Capitaines & gens portans charge, & quelle discipline militaire ils observent, de quelles armes ils se servent, s'ils sont meilleurs à l'assaut, ou en battaille rangee, quelle est la creance des Capitaines envers leurs soldats, quelles faveurs leurs maistres & Seigneurs leur portent. Outre cela,*

by land, and to this effect must he know the situation of such a place, &c.

Cur. It shall bee also needfull to know all the Ports; which are the stronger, which the weaker; if there be a garrison, and if the people of the countrie bee skilfull in Armes; how many vessels they can arme forth to sea; of what sort, whether ships or gallies.

Eud. He must also know what are their Captaines and men bearing charge, and what militarie discipline they observe, what armes or weapons they use, whether they are better at an assault, or in a maine Battaile, what authoririe the Captaines have with their souldiers, and what favours their Lords and Masters beare to them. Moreover, hee must

Il faut venir aux villes frontieres, les voir, & reconnoistre le fort & le foible. Il faut aussi iuger de la façon que les peuples obeïssent, si c'est par amour ou contrainte, & s'ils sont bien affectionnez à leurs superieurs; & puis les avenues du païs, l'aisance ou difficulté d'un passage, havre & riviere.

visite the frontier townes, see them, and know the strong and the weaker. Hee must also judge in what fashion the peoples doe obey, whether it bee by love or constraint, and whether they stand well affectionate towards their superiours; And then the entries into the countrie, the easinesse or difficultie of a passage, haven, or river.

Cur. *Vous ne dites rien des gens de lettres.*

Cur. You say nothing of men of learning.

Eud. *Ils ne sont point oubliez: Il faut sçavoir si les doctes sont en multitude ou paucité en un Estat, Quelles Academies, & Colleges ils ont, de quels privileges jouïssent les escoliers, s'il y a frequence, Quelle faculté y est la plus florissante, à qui est deferé la charge du Rectorat, quels*

Eud. They are not forgotten: He must know if in a state, the number of learned men be many or few, what Vniversities and Colledges they have, what priviledges the schollers injoy; whether there be great frequencie, which facultie is the most flourishing, to whom is deferred the Rectorship or Headship; what

Theolo-

[illegible]ologiens, Philoſo-[illegible]s, Medicins, Iuriſ-[illegible]ſultes ou Docteurs es [illegible]e, Hiſtoriens, Poetes, [illegible]athematiciens, s'ils [illegible]t du lieu, ou eſtran-[illegible]rs, &c.

Cur. *En voila beaucoup: j'y adjouſteray encor les mœurs du commun peuple, aſçavoir s'il eſt affable ou rechigneux, vertueux ou vicieux, s'il aime l'eſtranger ou non: Mais pource que la multitude des choſes, qui ſont à remarquer en un eſtat & païs luy pourroit affoiblir la memoire pour luy en deſrober quelque partie, je ſerois d'advis, qu'on aye un livre aſſez grand, pour en icelluy eſcrire le tout en bon ordre. Et je conſeille au voyageant, d'avoir outre les guides des chemins, une carte*

Divines, Philoſophers, Phyſitrians, Lawyers or Civilians, Hiſtorians, Poets, Mathematicians there are, and whether they are homeborne or ſtrangers, *&c.*

Cur. There is much: I will adde hereto alſo the manners of the common people, to wit, whether they be courteous or curriſh, vertuous or vicious, and if they love ſtrangers, or no: but becauſe the multitude of things obſervable in a State and countrie, may confound the memorie whereby ſome part may ſlippe away, my opinion is, hee ſhould have a booke of ſufficient bigneſſe, wherein to write downe all in good order. And I counſell our traveller to have (beſides his guides for the wayes) a Mappe

Geogra-

Geographique & Hydrographique, de tous les pays & contrees ou il se trouvera, pour en icelle tirer de lieu à autre une ligne à mesure qu'il s'advance en son voyage, & avec cela aye un journal en guise d'Almanach, où il notera de jour à autre toutes les villes, bourgs, villages, chasteaux, passages, destroits, sans oublier les lieuës, ce qu'à loisir il pourra mettre au net en son grand livre de remarques.

Eud. Mais, afin qu'il ne voyage point comme Enfant du commun, il luy sera messeant & comme indigne de sa qualité, de passer en la cour d'aucun Prince, sans avoir l'honneur de luy faire la reverence, & de se faire connoistre à luy, & aux plus

Geographicall and hydrographicall of all countries & places where he shall come, for to draw therein a line from place to place, according as he goeth forwards in his voyage, and withall have a day-booke in fashion of an Almanacke, where he shall note from day to day, all the Cities, Townes, villages, Castles, passages, straites, not forgetting the leagues, or miles, which at leasure hee may write faire into his great booke of observations.

Eud. But that hee may not travell like one of common or meane descent, it shall misbecome him, and be unworthy his qualitie, to passe into the Court of any Prince without having the honour to doe him reverence, & to make himself known to him, and to the

grand

greatest of his country.

Cur. Truly such a man that hath so travelled, and conversed with Great ones, and in so many places and occasions, cannot choose but have sufficiencie enough in him for the service of a King, of a State, and of the common-wealth.

End. You shall perceave three times more modestie, gentlenesse, and humilitie in such a man, than in any other house-dove, which hath never seene any thing, but through the hole of a broken pot; as you finde of these vaine-glorious fooles, who having gotten on their backe some suite of apparell of the new Court-fashion, swolne like toades, esteeme other Gentlemen their inferiours, in seeing them weare some doubler,

voyant

[illegible] *quelque* [illegible], *manteau, ou* [illegible] *accoustrement qui* [illegible] *encores son garbe à l'antique, & ne jugeront d'une personne au sens, au discours, ou à l'integrité des mœurs, mais seulement à la forme de son chapeau, à la grandeur de sa fraise, ou à telle autre chose exterieure.*

Cur. *Vn diamant de la vieille roche, quoy que tout brut, ou mal enchassé, ou mal poli, est tousjours plus precieux qu'un bapelourde, pour tout l'esmail, feuille & façon, dont elle pourroit estre enrichie.*

End. *Or c'est assez. Messieurs, vous remerciant de vostre bonne compagnie, vous presenteray mes treshumbles services. Adieu Messieurs.*

cloake or other ap[illegible] which is yet of the a[illegible] ent fashion; and will [illegible] judge of a man by [illegible] wit, and understand[illegible] by his discourse, or [illegible] the integritie of his m[illegible] ners, but onely by [illegible] fashion of his hat, [illegible] greatnesse of his ruffe, [illegible] by some such other [illegible] ward thing.

Cur. A true Diam[illegible] of the old rocke, tho[illegible] yet uncut, or ill set, [illegible] polished, is evermore [illegible] cious than a counter[illegible] for all the enamell, fo[illegible] and fashion, wherewi[illegible] can be enriched.

End. Well, wee h[illegible] talked enough Ge[illegible] men; thanking you [illegible] your good compan[illegible] present you my [illegible] humble service. Go[illegible] with you Gentlemen.

FINIS.